BIOVEG - Statistical analyses in R

Ecio Souza Diniz and Jan Thiele

A PROTOCOL TO LEARN AND TEACH STATISTICS IN R WITH VEGETATION DATA

contact: eciodiniz@gmail.com and jan.thiele@thuenen.de

RECOMMENDATIONS

- 1- Complete an introductory R course to understand the basic operations used in the software: e.g. how to import files, attach data, install packages and create objects and graphs.
- 2- It is important to have a basic understanding of the principles and functions of the statistical analysis you wish to perform.
- 3- If your analysis does not execute successfully using these syntaxes, it is useful to consult R forums (e.g. Stack Overflow and Stack Exchange Cross Validated) check if there is something wrong, missing or if this is simply not the appropriate analysis for your data.
- 4- Be sure about your choice of analysis. Refer to existing literature to help decide which analysis is most appropriate for your data.
- 5- If possible, it is highly recommended to read the references at the end of this script, especially those which are highlighted.
- 6- Try not to be overwhelmed by the various methodologies of statistical analysis which might be used to investigate the data. Again, consult with existing literature to help decide which analyses are most suitable.
- 7- Remember that this script was not created by statisticians. The adaptable nature of the R means that there are often several ways to complete the same analysis. This script describes one way to perform typical statistical analysis of the kind of data commonly generated in biological research.

Content

NORMALITY TEST

- Shapiro Wilk DATA TRANSFORMATION

```
- Log, square, inverse and Arcsine square root
ONE SAMPLE TESTS
    - T-test and Wilcoxon Signed Rank Test
TWO SAMPLE TESTS

    Independent samples: Wilcoxon Rank-Sum Test (Mann-Whitney U-test)

and T-test
    - Dependent samples: Wilcoxon Rank-Sum Test and Paired T-test
ANALYSES OF VARIANCE

    Anova and Tukey post-hoc

    - Kruskal-Wallis and Dunn's test post-hoc
INDEPENDENCE TEST
    - Chi-squared
CORRELATION ANALYSES
    - Pearson, Spearman and VIF (Variance Inflation Factor)
DIAGNOSTIC FOR LINEARITY
    - component+Residual (Partial Residual) Plots
REGRESSION MODELS
    - LM (Linear Model)
    - GLM (Generalized Linear Models

    GLMM (Generalized linear mixed models)

    - GLMM-PQL (Fit GLMM using Penalized Quasi-Likelihood - PQL): spatial
and temporal autocorrelation
    - LOGISTIC REGRESSION
    - SPATIAL AUTOCORRELATION TEST: Moran's I
    - LME (Linear mixed models)
    - GLS (Generalized Least squares)
    - QUADRATIC MODEL
    - GNM (Generalized Nonlinear Models)
    - GAM (Generalized Aditive Models)
    - GAMM (Generalized Aditive Mixed Models)
SUPERVISED LEARNING
    - Random Forest
MODELS SELECTION
    - Akaike Criterion: AIC and QAIC
MODEL AVERAGING

    Average of models selected by AIC or QAIC

POST-HOC TEST TO REGRESSION MODELS
    -Tukey's HSD (honest significant difference)
    - LmerTest (mixed models)
MULTIVARIATE ANALYSIS
    - NMDS, ANOSIM, CCA, PCA, PERMANOVA and INDVAL (Indicator species
analysis)
```

Read test datasets

BIOVEG = your source (file) of data. Example:

setwd("C:/")

```
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG)
                                              Species Richness Diameter
##
             type Plot Site
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea triplinervia
                                                             8
                                                                  27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                                  Amaioua intermedia
                                                            10
                                                                  39.15
                                                                  33.93
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                       Aniba firmula
                                                            10
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                       Annona_cacans
                                                            10
                                                                  40.43
## 5 Semidecidual p005 AREA1 Aspidosperma australe
                                                             9
                                                                  34.31
## 6 Semidecidual p006 AREA1 Aspidosperma olivaceum
                                                             7
                                                                  16.03
     Mean_diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation_mean
Temperature mean
## 1
             6.357
                         0.058
                                       7
                                                        1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                         0.120
                                      12
                                                        1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                         0.090
                                      10
                                                        1250
24.4
## 4
             6.626
                         0.128
                                      19
                                                        1250
24.4
             6.724
## 5
                         0.092
                                      19
                                                        1250
24.4
## 6
             7.536
                         0.020
                                      23
                                                        1250
24.4
     Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x
##
                                                      utm.y local.utm.x
## 1
          6.94
                      14.34
                                  0
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                 747923
## 2
          2.74
                       6.94
                                -10
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                 747913
## 3
          1.71
                       2.35
                                -20
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                 747903
## 4
                      2.47
                                -30
                                          0 747923 7807727
          1.60
                                                                 747893
## 5
                       1.02
                                -40
                                          0 747923 7807727
          2.35
                                                                 747883
## 6
          2.90
                       5.74
                                  0
                                        -10 747923 7807727
                                                                 747923
     local.utm.y
##
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
## 5
         7807727
## 6
         7807717
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")</pre>
head(Hogweed)
     Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
Species.richness
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
## 1
       s1
                                                 0.5
                                                            70
18
## 2
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.7
                                                            65
       s2
19
## 3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                            30
       s3
                                                 0.4
16
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                            90
## 4
       s4
                                                 0.9
```

| 23 | |
|--|--------|
| ## 5 s5 VOL ruderal.grass 2002 0.7 | 75 |
| 27 | |
| ## 6 s6 VOL woodland 2002 0.2 | 5 |
| 16 | |
| ## Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Alt | itude |
| Inclination | |
| | 95.653 |
| 2 | |
| | 95.653 |
| 2 | |
| | 95.653 |
| 2 NONE NONE 20 | 111 |
| ## 4 1.0 20 NONE NONE 29 | 92.112 |
| | 2.112 |
| 2 | /2.112 |
| | 8.394 |
| 2 | 70.354 |
| ## Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g | |
| ## 1 W 0.19 3.99 22.27 | |
| ## 2 W 0.19 3.56 12.49 | |
| ## 3 W 0.19 8.44 39.95 | |
| ## 4 W 0.12 2.53 12.34 | |
| ## 5 W 0.12 2.53 12.34 | |
| ## 6 NW 0.16 2.62 10.77 | |

NORMALITY TEST

One of the most commonly used tests in Botany is Shapiro-Wilk. This test verifies whether one specific variable from your data is normally (gaussian) distributed. If the p-value is below the critical level (e.g. below 0.05) the variable can be described as deviating significantly from the normal (gaussian) distribution.

```
# usage:
shapiro.test(BIOVEG$Basal.area)
##
## Shapiro-Wilk normality test
##
## data: BIOVEG$Basal.area
## W = 0.50624, p-value < 2.2e-16</pre>
```

DATA TRANSFORMATION

In some cases it is necessary to transform your data, either to achieve normality or to get a better fit for the residuals of your model. Here the mention some of the most commonly applied transformations, but there are many others (e.g. Box cox) and it's

always good to read about other possibilities to maximize the fit and robustness of your analysis.

plus: BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".") head(BIOVEG, 4) # reading only the first 4 rows

```
type Plot Site
                                            Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea triplinervia
                                                                 27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1 Amaioua_intermedia
                                                           10
                                                                 39.15
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                      Aniba firmula
                                                           10
                                                                 33.93
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                      Annona cacans
                                                           10
                                                                 40.43
     Mean_diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation_mean
Temperature mean
## 1
                        0.058
                                      7
             6.357
                                                       1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                        0.120
                                     12
                                                       1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                        0.090
                                     10
                                                       1250
24.4
## 4
             6.626
                        0.128
                                     19
                                                       1250
24.4
##
    Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x
                                                     utm.y local.utm.x
          6.94
                     14.34
                                         0 747923 7807727
## 1
                                 0
                                                                747923
## 2
          2.74
                      6.94
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                -10
                                                                747913
## 3
                      2.35
                               -20
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                                747903
          1.71
                      2.47
                               -30
                                         0 747923 7807727
## 4
          1.60
                                                                747893
##
     local.utm.y
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
Basal.plus <- BIOVEG$Basal.area + 5
plus<- cbind(BIOVEG$Basal.area, Basal.plus) # just to have a look at the
head(plus, 10) # reading only the first 10 rows of the outcome
               Basal.plus
##
    [1,] 0.058
                    5.058
    [2,] 0.120
                    5.120
##
##
   [3,] 0.090
                    5.090
##
   [4,] 0.128
                    5.128
##
   [5,] 0.092
                    5.092
##
   [6,] 0.020
                    5.020
##
    [7,] 0.143
                    5.143
   [8,] 0.139
                    5.139
    [9,] 0.721
                    5.721
##
## [10,] 0.107
                    5.107
```

log:

Mainly indicated to try to make right-skewed data normal and by default included in Poisson GLM (i.e. the default link function is log). But, many authors have suggested not to transform count (poisson) data. Read about it if possible.

Note: in case your data contain zeros or negative values, you have to add a constant to all values so that all of them are positive before you can take the logarithm.

```
Basal.log <- log(BIOVEG$Basal.area)</pre>
c1<- cbind(BIOVEG$Basal.area, Basal.log)</pre>
head(c1, 10) # reading only the first 10 rows of the outcome
##
                Basal.log
##
   [1,] 0.058 -2.8473123
    [2,] 0.120 -2.1202635
   [3,] 0.090 -2.4079456
   [4,] 0.128 -2.0557250
##
   [5,] 0.092 -2.3859667
   [6,] 0.020 -3.9120230
##
## [7,] 0.143 -1.9449106
## [8,] 0.139 -1.9732813
## [9,] 0.721 -0.3271161
## [10,] 0.107 -2.2349264
x <- rnorm(10, mean = 2, sd = 2) # example of a variable with values =< 0
log(x) # does not work
## Warning in log(x): NaNs produced
##
    [1]
               NaN 1.2659236 0.4878708 1.1354343
                                                            NaN 0.8612742
   [7] -0.6677834
                          NaN 1.3378603 1.4309497
c2 \leftarrow abs(min(x)) + 0.1 \# the constant you have to add to x to make all
values > 0
head(c2, 10) #... 10 rows of the outcome
## [1] 1.567473
x.\log \leftarrow \log(x + c2) \# works
head (x.log, 10) # ...10 rows of the outcome
    [1] -2.3025851 1.6319505 1.1619993 1.5432977 0.1195393 1.3695669
   [7] 0.7325203 -0.1414484 1.6823823 1.7492247
c3<- cbind(x, x.log)
head(c3, 10) # ... 10 rows of the outcome
##
                         x.log
                  Х
    [1,] -1.4674729 -2.3025851
##
   [2,] 3.5463668 1.6319505
   [3,] 1.6288444 1.1619993
##
   [4,] 3.1125251 1.5432977
```

```
## [5,] -0.4404954 0.1195393

## [6,] 2.3661737 1.3695669

## [7,] 0.5128441 0.7325203

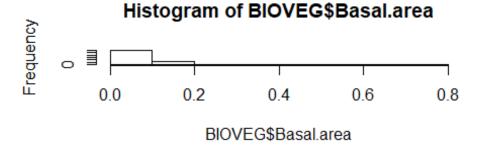
## [8,] -0.6993730 -0.1414484

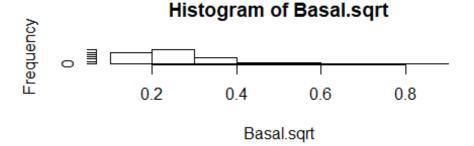
## [9,] 3.8108808 1.6823823

## [10,] 4.1826696 1.7492247
```

square:

```
Basal.sqrt <- sqrt(BIOVEG$Basal.area)
par(mfrow=c(2,1)) # Let's check the transformation using histograms
hist(BIOVEG$Basal.area)
hist(Basal.sqrt)</pre>
```





Inverse:

```
Basal.inv <- 1 / BIOVEG$Basal.area
head(Basal.inv, 10) # reading only the first 10 rows

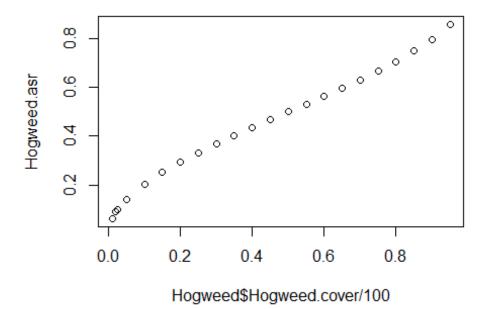
## [1] 17.241379 8.333333 11.111111 7.812500 10.869565 50.000000
6.993007
## [8] 7.194245 1.386963 9.345794
```

Arcsine square root:

Can be used for data that range between zero and 1. Often indicated for binomial data (proportions/ percentages), but it is preferable to use a model with binomial distribution rather than an arcsine square root transformation in this case.

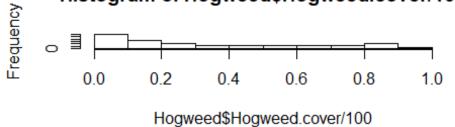
```
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")</pre>
head(Hogweed, 4) # reading only the first 4 rows of data
##
     Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
Species.richness
## 1
       s1
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.5
                                                           70
18
## 2
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.7
                                                           65
       s2
19
## 3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
       s3
                                                0.4
                                                           30
16
## 4
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.9
                                                           90
       s4
23
##
     Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
Inclination
## 1
                0.9
                                80
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB 295.653
2
## 2
                1.4
                               65
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB 295.653
2
## 3
                1.7
                               90
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB 295.653
2
## 4
                1.0
                                20
                                       NONE
                                                   NONE 292.112
2
##
     Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
                  0.19
## 1
                            3.99
                                      22.27
              W
## 2
              W
                  0.19
                            3.56
                                      12.49
                                      39.95
## 3
              W
                  0.19
                            8.44
                             2.53
                                      12.34
## 4
              W
                  0.12
Hogweed.asr <- asin(sqrt(Hogweed$Hogweed.cover/100))*2/pi</pre>
```

plot(Hogweed\$Hogweed.cover/100, Hogweed.asr)



```
par(mfrow=c(2,1))
hist(Hogweed$Hogweed.cover/100)
hist(Hogweed.asr)
```

Histogram of Hogweed\$Hogweed.cover/100



Histogram of Hogweed.asr

Frequency 0.0 0.2 0.4 0.6 8.0 Hogweed.asr

ONE SAMPLE TEST

Indication: to test one sample mean against zero to verify whether there is a significant difference.

Parametric

```
T-TEST - One sample
```

```
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG, 4) # reading only the first 4 rows
##
             type Plot Site
                                            Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea triplinervia
                                                           8
                                                                27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1 Amaioua intermedia
                                                          10
                                                                39.15
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                      Aniba_firmula
                                                          10
                                                                33.93
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                      Annona cacans
                                                          10
                                                                40.43
     Mean diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation mean
Temperature_mean
                        0.058
                                      7
## 1
             6.357
                                                      1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                        0.120
                                     12
                                                      1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                        0.090
                                     10
                                                      1250
24.4
## 4
             6.626
                        0.128
                                     19
                                                      1250
24.4
##
    Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x utm.y local.utm.x
## 1
          6.94
                     14.34
                                0
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                               747923
## 2
          2.74
                      6.94
                               -10
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                               747913
## 3
          1.71
                      2.35
                               -20
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                               747903
                                         0 747923 7807727
## 4
                      2.47
                               -30
                                                               747893
          1.60
## local.utm.y
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
# Usage:
t.test(BIOVEG$Basal.area, mu=0) # test against zero
##
##
   One Sample t-test
##
## data: BIOVEG$Basal.area
## t = 9.3933, df = 149, p-value < 2.2e-16
## alternative hypothesis: true mean is not equal to 0
## 95 percent confidence interval:
## 0.06618719 0.10145281
```

```
## sample estimates:
## mean of x
## 0.08382
```

Nonparametric

```
Wilcoxon Signed Rank Test
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG, 4) # reading only the first 4 rows
##
             type Plot Site
                                            Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea triplinervia
                                                                27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                               Amaioua_intermedia
                                                          10
                                                                39.15
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                     Aniba firmula
                                                           10
                                                                33.93
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                                          10
                                                                40.43
                                      Annona_cacans
     Mean diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation mean
Temperature_mean
## 1
                        0.058
                                      7
             6.357
                                                      1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                        0.120
                                     12
                                                      1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                        0.090
                                     10
                                                      1250
24.4
## 4
                        0.128
                                     19
             6.626
                                                      1250
24.4
##
    Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x utm.y local.utm.x
          6.94
                     14.34
                                 0
## 1
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                               747923
## 2
          2.74
                      6.94
                               -10
                                        0 747923 7807727
                                                               747913
## 3
          1.71
                      2.35
                                         0 747923 7807727
                               -20
                                                               747903
## 4
          1.60
                      2.47
                               -30
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                               747893
##
     local.utm.y
## 1
        7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
        7807727
# Usage:
wilcox.test(BIOVEG$Basal.area, mu=0)
##
##
   Wilcoxon signed rank test with continuity correction
##
## data: BIOVEG$Basal.area
## V = 11325, p-value < 2.2e-16
## alternative hypothesis: true location is not equal to 0
```

TWO SAMPLE TEST

Indication: to compare two independent samples.

Independent Two samples

```
Parametric: T-TEST - Two sample:
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG, 4) # reading only the first 4 rows
##
             type Plot Site
                                            Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea triplinervia
                                                                27.12
                                                           8
                                                                39.15
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                                 Amaioua intermedia
                                                          10
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                      Aniba_firmula
                                                          10
                                                                33.93
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                      Annona cacans
                                                          10
                                                                40.43
     Mean_diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation_mean
Temperature mean
## 1
                        0.058
                                      7
                                                      1250
             6.357
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                        0.120
                                     12
                                                      1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                        0.090
                                     10
                                                      1250
24.4
## 4
             6.626
                        0.128
                                     19
                                                      1250
24.4
    Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x
##
                                                    utm.y local.utm.x
## 1
          6.94
                     14.34
                                0
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                               747923
## 2
          2.74
                      6.94
                               -10
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                               747913
## 3
                                         0 747923 7807727
          1.71
                      2.35
                               -20
                                                               747903
## 4
          1.60
                      2.47
                               -30
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                               747893
     local.utm.y
##
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
# Testing whether vegetation type differ in tree basal area average
# usage:
t.test(BIOVEG$Basal.area[BIOVEG$type=="Aluvial"],
BIOVEG$Basal.area[BIOVEG$type=="Ombrofila"],alternative="two.sided")
##
## Welch Two Sample t-test
## data: BIOVEG$Basal.area[BIOVEG$type == "Aluvial"] and
BIOVEG$Basal.area[BIOVEG$type == "Ombrofila"]
## t = -0.9419, df = 61.174, p-value = 0.3499
## alternative hypothesis: true difference in means is not equal to 0
```

```
## 95 percent confidence interval:
## -0.04934092 0.01774092
## sample estimates:
## mean of x mean of y
##
      0.0599
                0.0757
# Testing whether a vegetation type has significantly less tree basal
# than the other
t.test(BIOVEG$Basal.area[BIOVEG$type=="Aluvial"],
       BIOVEG$Basal.area[BIOVEG$type=="Ombrofila"], alternative="less",
       var.equal=TRUE)
##
   Two Sample t-test
##
##
## data: BIOVEG$Basal.area[BIOVEG$type == "Aluvial"] and
BIOVEG$Basal.area[BIOVEG$type == "Ombrofila"]
## t = -0.9419, df = 98, p-value = 0.1743
## alternative hypothesis: true difference in means is less than 0
## 95 percent confidence interval:
          -Inf 0.01205505
##
## sample estimates:
## mean of x mean of y
      0.0599 0.0757
```

Dependent samples

Indication: to compare two dependent samples.

Parametric: PAIRED T-TEST

Independent Two samples

Nonparametric: Wilcoxon Rank-Sum Test (or Mann-Whitney U-test) BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".") head(BIOVEG, 4) ## type Plot Site Species Richness Diameter ## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea_triplinervia 8 27.12 ## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1 Amaioua intermedia 10 39.15 ## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1 Aniba firmula 10 33.93 ## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1 Annona cacans 10 40.43 Mean diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation mean Temperature_mean 7 ## 1 6.357 0.058 1250 24.4 ## 2 6.524 0.120 12 1250 24.4 ## 3 6.632 0.090 10 1250 24.4 ## 4 6.626 0.128 19 1250 24.4 Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x utm.y local.utm.x ## 1 6.94 14.34 0 0 747923 7807727 747923 ## 2 2.74 6.94 -10 0 747923 7807727 747913 ## 3 1.71 2.35 -20 0 747923 7807727 747903 2.47 ## 4 1.60 -30 0 747923 7807727 747893 local.utm.y ## 1 7807727 ## 2 7807727 ## 3 7807727 ## 4 7807727

Where y is numeric and A is a binary factor (presence or absence, 0 or 1, or similar) we can use the formula notation in wilcox.test

```
BIOVEG$Aluvial <- ifelse(BIOVEG$type=="Aluvial", 1, 0) # create binary factor
wilcox.test(BIOVEG$Basal.area ~ BIOVEG$Aluvial)

##
## Wilcoxon rank sum test with continuity correction
##
## data: BIOVEG$Basal.area by BIOVEG$Aluvial
## W = 2754, p-value = 0.3121
## alternative hypothesis: true location shift is not equal to 0
```

independent 2-group Mann-Whitney U Test; here we specify the two groups to be compared using indexing (square brackets)

```
##
## Wilcoxon rank sum test with continuity correction
##
## data: BIOVEG$Basal.area[BIOVEG$type == "Aluvial"] and
BIOVEG$Basal.area[BIOVEG$type == "Ombrofila"]
## W = 1385.5, p-value = 0.3519
## alternative hypothesis: true location shift is not equal to 0
```

Dependent (i.e. Paired) Two-Sample

Nonparametric: Wilcoxon Rank-Sum Test

Indication: the same function as the Wilcoxon test and two sample T-test, but addressing paired samples. This applies to data which has been collected on the same plots, for example, either on the same date or at different dates (e.g. comparison between basal area in 2010 and 2014. The basal area of 2014 in general is dependent on how much was accumulated in 2010).

Another test dataset describes the soil nutrient content of a number of different plots. The quantities of each nutrient (N, P, K) were derived from a single soil sample per plot.

```
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")</pre>
head(Hogweed, 4)
     Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
##
Species.richness
## 1
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.5
       s1
                                                             70
18
## 2
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.7
       s2
                                                             65
19
## 3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.4
                                                             30
       s3
16
## 4
       s4
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.9
                                                             90
23
##
     Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
Inclination
## 1
                0.9
                                80
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
## 2
                1.4
                                65
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 3
                                90
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
                1.7
2
## 4
                1.0
                                        NONE
                                20
                                                    NONE 292.112
2
##
     Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
## 1
              W
                   0.19
                             3.99
                                       22.27
## 2
                   0.19
                             3.56
                                       12.49
                                       39.95
## 3
              W
                  0.19
                             8.44
## 4
                  0.12
                             2.53
                                      12.34
```

When you have dependent samples, in "paired" insert TRUE. For independent samples insert FALSE.

```
# Usage:
wilcox.test(Hogweed$P_mg_100g, Hogweed$K_mg_100g, paired=TRUE)
##
## Wilcoxon signed rank test with continuity correction
##
## data: Hogweed$P_mg_100g and Hogweed$K_mg_100g
## V = 891, p-value < 2.2e-16
## alternative hypothesis: true location shift is not equal to 0</pre>
```

ANALYSIS OF VARIANCE

Indication: tests for differences between the means of more than two groups e.g. Diameter in treatment1, Diameter in treatment2, Diameter in treatment3).

Note: All Analyses below relate to variance, one-sample and two-sample. The majority of this analysis can be completed using the basic pre-loaded built-in "stats" package. To perform Dunn's test (Post hoc), which follows Kruskal-Wallis,the "dunn.test" package must be installed.

Parametric tests: One-Way Anova

Note 2: transformations of the dependent variable, e.g. log, can be specified in the syntax of ANOVA and other functions directly.

```
# usage:
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG, 4)
             type Plot Site
                                            Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea_triplinervia
                                                                 27.12
                                                           8
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                                 Amaioua intermedia
                                                           10
                                                                 39.15
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                      Aniba firmula
                                                                 33.93
                                                           10
                                      Annona cacans
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                                                 40.43
                                                           10
    Mean diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation mean
Temperature mean
## 1
             6.357
                        0.058
                                      7
                                                       1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                        0.120
                                     12
                                                       1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                        0.090
                                     10
                                                       1250
24.4
## 4
             6.626
                        0.128
                                     19
                                                       1250
24.4
```

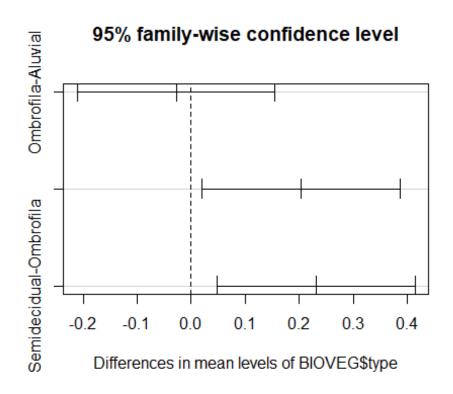
```
Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x utm.y local.utm.x
##
## 1
          6.94
                     14.34
                                 0
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                                747923
                      6.94
## 2
          2.74
                               -10
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                                747913
## 3
          1.71
                      2.35
                               -20
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                                747903
## 4
                      2.47
                               -30
                                         0 747923 7807727
          1.60
                                                                747893
##
     local.utm.y
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
aov(log(Diameter) ~ type, data=BIOVEG)
## Call:
##
      aov(formula = log(Diameter) ~ type, data = BIOVEG)
##
## Terms:
                        type Residuals
##
## Sum of Squares
                    1.590824 22.039904
## Deg. of Freedom
                           2
                                   147
##
## Residual standard error: 0.3872097
## Estimated effects may be unbalanced
results <- aov(log(Diameter) ~ type, data=BIOVEG)
summary(results)
##
                Df Sum Sq Mean Sq F value Pr(>F)
                                    5.305 0.00596 **
## type
                 2 1.591
                           0.7954
## Residuals
               147 22.040 0.1499
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
```

Tukey test (post hoc)

Indication: to identify when there is a significant difference between categories previously shown as overall result by parametric ANOVA.

```
# Usage:
a1 <- aov(log(BIOVEG$Diameter) ~ BIOVEG$type)
posthoc <- TukeyHSD(x=a1, 'BIOVEG$type', conf.level=0.95)</pre>
print(posthoc)
     Tukey multiple comparisons of means
##
##
       95% family-wise confidence level
##
## Fit: aov(formula = log(BIOVEG$Diameter) ~ BIOVEG$type)
##
## $`BIOVEG$type`
##
                                 diff
                                              lwr
                                                        upr
                                                                 p adj
## Ombrofila-Aluvial -0.0280405 -0.21139925 0.1553182 0.9303204
```

```
## Semidecidual-Aluvial 0.2030858 0.01972702 0.3864445 0.0259703 ## Semidecidual-Ombrofila 0.2311263 0.04776753 0.4144850 0.0092752 plot(posthoc)
```



Non-Parametric tests: Kruskal-Wallis

Indication: use following a significant result in the Kruskal-Wallace test (a non-parametric analysis, the underlying distribution is not assumed in advance).

```
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG, 4)
##
             type Plot Site
                                              Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea_triplinervia
                                                             8
                                                                  27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                                  Amaioua_intermedia
                                                            10
                                                                  39.15
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                       Aniba firmula
                                                                  33.93
                                                            10
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                       Annona cacans
                                                            10
                                                                  40.43
     Mean_diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation_mean
Temperature_mean
## 1
                         0.058
             6.357
                                                        1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                         0.120
                                      12
                                                        1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                         0.090
                                      10
                                                        1250
24.4
## 4
             6.626
                         0.128
                                      19
                                                        1250
24.4
```

```
Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x utm.y local.utm.x
##
## 1
          6.94
                     14.34
                                 0
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                                747923
          2.74
                      6.94
## 2
                               -10
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                                747913
## 3
          1.71
                      2.35
                               -20
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                                747903
## 4
                      2.47
                               -30
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                                747893
          1.60
##
     local.utm.y
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
        7807727
#Usage:
r4<- kruskal.test(BIOVEG$Basal.area ~ BIOVEG$type)
r4
##
    Kruskal-Wallis rank sum test
##
##
## data: BIOVEG$Basal.area by BIOVEG$type
## Kruskal-Wallis chi-squared = 10.899, df = 2, p-value = 0.004299
```

Dunn's Test (post hoc)

It performs the same function as a TukeyHSD test following ANOVA, but here is following Kruskal-Wallis.

install.packages("dunn.test")

```
# Usage:
library(dunn.test)
dunn.test(BIOVEG$Basal.area, g=BIOVEG$type, kw=TRUE, label=TRUE,
wrap=TRUE,
          table=TRUE, list=FALSE, rmc=FALSE, alpha=0.05)
     Kruskal-Wallis rank sum test
##
##
## data: x and group
## Kruskal-Wallis chi-squared = 10.8989, df = 2, p-value = 0
##
##
##
                              Comparison of x by group
                                    (No adjustment)
##
## Col Mean-
## Row Mean
                 Aluvial
                           Ombrofil
## Ombrofil |
                0.694041
                  0.2438
##
##
```

Independence test - Chi-squared

The Chi-squared test is one of the most commonly used tests in biology and biomedicine because it can test if one variable is dependent or not on a certain category. In the example below we use the phenology stages of a species and the abundance of individuals counted at each stage over 4 months (Feb, Mar, Apr, May). Our aim is to check if the abundances at each stage are dependent on the months. In case Chi-squared is significant and, thus, shows dependence, you need to split the table into two in a 2×2 format and run the test again. This post-hoc test is called: Partition of Chi-squared. Further Information about this test is widely available online.

install and load the MASS package:

```
# install.packages("MASS")
library(MASS)
```

To build a contingency from columns of a data table you can use. For example:

```
# tbl <- table(Data$flowering, Data$fruits, Data$Month)</pre>
```

Here, we will just create a contingency table "manually":

```
tbl \leftarrow rbind(c(7,1,3,9), c(8,5,2,0))
colnames(tbl) <- c("Feb", "Mar", "Apr", "May")</pre>
rownames(tbl) <- c("Flowering", "Fruits")</pre>
tbl
##
             Feb Mar Apr May
## Flowering
               7 1 3
                            9
## Fruits
               8
                  5
                        2
# Usage:
chisq.test(tbl) # normal p-value of Chi-squared test
## Warning in chisq.test(tbl): Chi-squared approximation may be incorrect
##
##
    Pearson's Chi-squared test
##
```

```
## data: tbl
## X-squared = 11.453, df = 3, p-value = 0.009513

chisq.test(tbl, simulate.p.value=TRUE) # simulated p-value (Monte Carlo test)

##
## Pearson's Chi-squared test with simulated p-value (based on 2000 ## replicates)
##
## data: tbl
## X-squared = 11.453, df = NA, p-value = 0.004498
```

The outcome showed a message about the robustness of the Chi-squared appproximation. Thus, first of all be sure about the quality of the dataset you are using for such analyses.

```
# "Posthoc" test comparing only two month
tbl.1 <- tbl[,c("Mar", "Apr")]
tbl.1
##
             Mar Apr
## Flowering
               1
                   3
## Fruits
               5
chisq.test(tbl.1)
## Warning in chisq.test(tbl.1): Chi-squared approximation may be
incorrect
##
    Pearson's Chi-squared test with Yates' continuity correction
## data: tbl.1
## X-squared = 0.73661, df = 1, p-value = 0.3907
```

CORRELATION ANALYSIS

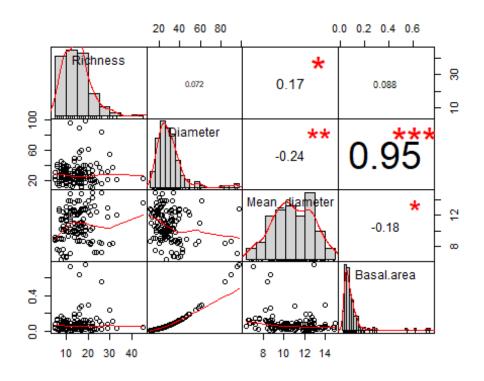
Pearson's correlation test

use PerformanceAnalytics package

```
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG, 4)

## type Plot Site Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea_triplinervia 8 27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1 Amaioua_intermedia 10 39.15
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1 Aniba firmula 10 33.93
```

```
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1 Annona_cacans 10
                                                                40.43
##
    Mean_diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation_mean
Temperature_mean
                                      7
## 1
                        0.058
             6.357
                                                      1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                        0.120
                                     12
                                                      1250
24.4
## 3
                                     10
             6.632
                        0.090
                                                      1250
24.4
## 4
                                     19
             6.626
                        0.128
                                                      1250
24.4
    Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x utm.y local.utm.x
## 1
          6.94
                     14.34
                                0
                                        0 747923 7807727
                                                               747923
          2.74
                      6.94
                               -10
                                        0 747923 7807727
## 2
                                                               747913
## 3
          1.71
                      2.35
                               -20
                                        0 747923 7807727
                                                               747903
## 4
          1.60
                     2.47
                               -30
                                        0 747923 7807727
                                                               747893
##
    local.utm.y
## 1
        7807727
## 2
        7807727
## 3
        7807727
## 4
        7807727
# Usage:
# install.packages("PerformanceAnalytics")
library(PerformanceAnalytics)
chart.Correlation(BIOVEG[,c(5, 6, 7, 8)])
```



```
correlacao<- cor(BIOVEG[,c(5, 6, 7, 8)])</pre>
round(correlacao, digits=2)
                  Richness Diameter Mean diameter Basal.area
##
## Richness
                      1.00
                               0.07
                                              0.17
                                                          0.09
## Diameter
                      0.07
                               1.00
                                             -0.24
                                                          0.95
## Mean diameter
                      0.17
                              -0.24
                                              1.00
                                                         -0.18
## Basal.area
                      0.09
                               0.95
                                             -0.18
                                                          1.00
```

Correlation test between just two variables:

```
## use the default R function "cor.test"
cor.test(BIOVEG$Richness, BIOVEG$Basal.area)
##
##
    Pearson's product-moment correlation
##
          BIOVEG$Richness and BIOVEG$Basal.area
## data:
## t = 1.0703, df = 148, p-value = 0.2862
## alternative hypothesis: true correlation is not equal to 0
## 95 percent confidence interval:
## -0.07365322 0.24447057
## sample estimates:
##
          cor
## 0.08764283
```

The number between parentheses are the column numbers of your data file (e.g. Excel file). This is how you select the variables whose correlation you want to check.

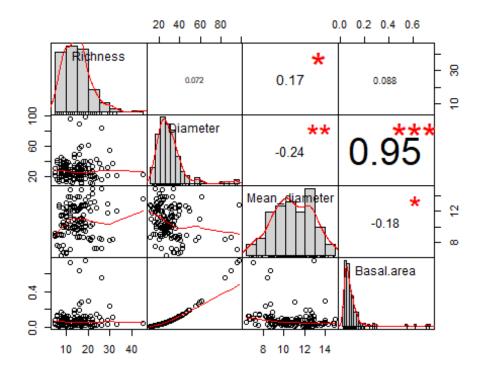
REMEMBER: correlation just shows you if one data value increases/ decreases with the other, but it does not say that they are dependent on each other. To check dependence between variables you need to test their relation and for that there are regression models. However, even regression models do not prove that there is a causal relationships between the variables. Correlation and regression cannot discern between real causal effects and spurious correlations (that are caused by a third variable/ other variables).

Spearman's correlation test

There is a perpetual discussion among statisticians about whetherPearson analysis assumes strictly normality, but a large majority of high impact literature continues to use it, even in non-normal cases. Some researchers recommend Spearman, but, for a number of reasons, its application is more limited than Pearson. Please read about this subject further if it applies to your analysis.

If you want to use Spearman rank correlation just use the 'method' argument:

```
chart.Correlation(BIOVEG[,c(5, 6, 7, 8)], method="spearman")
```



```
correlacao<- cor(BIOVEG[,c(5, 6, 7, 8)], method="spearman")</pre>
round(correlacao, digits=2)
##
                  Richness Diameter Mean diameter Basal.area
## Richness
                      1.00
                               0.00
                                              0.16
                                                          0.00
## Diameter
                      0.00
                               1.00
                                              -0.29
                                                          1.00
## Mean diameter
                      0.16
                               -0.29
                                              1.00
                                                         -0.29
## Basal.area
                      0.00
                               1.00
                                              -0.29
```

Correlation test between just two variables:

Sometimes Spearman ranking is not able to precisely compute p-values. Thus, an option is also test Pearson and provide the results of both.

VIF - Variance Inflation Factor

Among the most robust approaches used nowadays, the variance inflation factor (VIF) is the quotient of the variance in a model with multiple terms (predictors) by the variance of a model with one term alone. This is a great method to quantify the severity of multicollinearity in an ordinary least squares regression analysis (e.g. LM, LME, GLS, etc). VIF provides an index that returns an outcome measuring how much the variance (the square of the estimate's standard deviation) of an estimated model coefficient is increased because of collinearity.

In Ecology, an usual threshold to consider collinearity among predictors acceptable is ${
m VIF} < 0.5$

For further details and information on the statistical backbone and potential of VIF, please read the great revision and simulations of Dormann et al. 2013 and Zurr et al.2010.

Dormann et al. Collinearity: A review of methods to deal with it and a simulation study evaluating their performance. Ecography, 36(1): 27-46, 2013.

Zuur AF, Ieno EN & Elphick CS. A protocol for data exploration to avoid common statistical problems. Methods in Ecology and Evolution 1: 3-14, 2010.

We use the function vif of the package car to calculate the variance inflation factor:

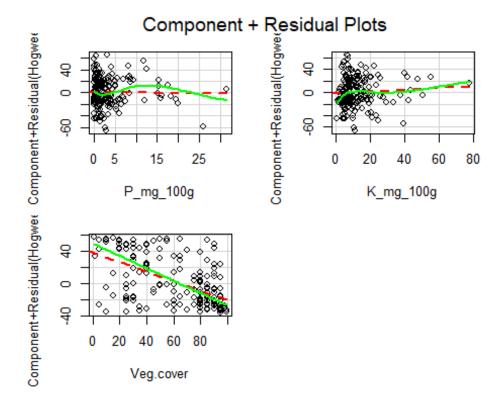
```
# install.packages("car")
library(car)
BIODIV.vif<- lm(Species.richness ~ P_mg_100g + Hogweed.cover + N_perc +
                 Habitat.type, data=Hogweed)
vif(BIODIV.vif)
                   GVIF Df GVIF^(1/(2*Df))
##
## P mg 100g
               1.093411 1
                                  1.045663
## Hogweed.cover 1.293545 1
                                  1.137341
## N perc
             1.122377 1
                                  1.059423
## Habitat.type 1.434640 4
                                 1.046147
```

The outcome shows that all predictors have VIF < 5, thus they can be kept together in the same model.

Diagnostic for linearity

To check for linear relationships among dependent (Y) and predictor variables (X) we can use the function "crPlots" of the package "car". This function returns a graph that bases the diagnostic on the residuals of the model. The more closely the two lines (solid and dashed) fit each other, the more linear is the relationship among Y and X.

```
library(car) # graphical diagnostic for linearity
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")</pre>
head(Hogweed,4)
##
     Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
Species.richness
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
## 1
       s1
                                                 0.5
                                                            70
18
## 2
       s2
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.7
                                                            65
19
## 3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
       s3
                                                 0.4
                                                            30
16
## 4
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
       s4
                                                 0.9
                                                            90
23
##
     Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
Inclination
## 1
                0.9
                                80
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 2
                1.4
                                65
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 3
                1.7
                                90
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 4
                1.0
                                        NONE
                                                          292.112
                                20
                                                    NONE
2
##
     Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
## 1
              W
                  0.19
                             3.99
                                       22.27
## 2
                   0.19
                                      12.49
              W
                             3.56
                                       39.95
## 3
                   0.19
                             8.44
              W
## 4
              W
                  0.12
                             2.53
                                      12.34
DBH<- glm(Hogweed.cover ~ P_mg_100g + K_mg_100g + Veg.cover,
data=Hogweed,
                                                         family="gaussian")
crPlots(DBH, col.lines=c("red", "green"))
```



In the diagnostic we can see that the predictor "Veg.cover" shows the best, and an acceptable, fit for linearity. This is indicated by the close fit between the red line (best fit) and green line. Conversely, the linearity of "P_mg_100g" and "K_mg_100g" deviates considerably.

REGRESSION

Indication: Regression analysis is a statistical approach for estimating the relationships between a dependent variable (axis Y and commonly called the outcome variable') and one or more independent variables (predictors). There are linear and nonlinear regression models, although the linear ones are the most common form of used regression analysis.

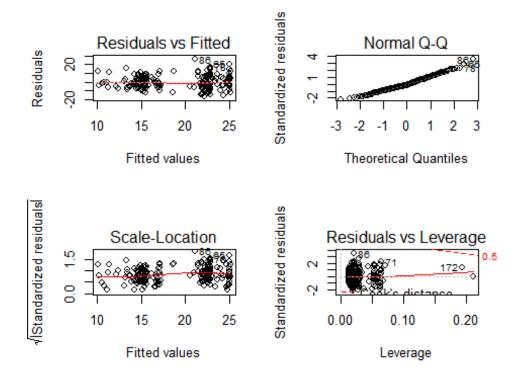
LM (Linear Model)

This is the most famous type of regression of analysis and relies in the assumptions of the Ordinary least squares: normal distribution, homoscedasticity, linearity between, predictors and dependent variable, weak multicollinearity among predictors, independence of errors and residuals not correlated.

```
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(Hogweed,4)</pre>
```

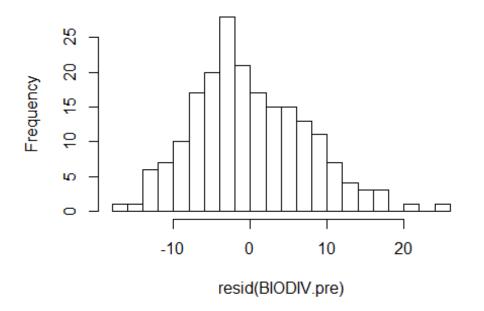
```
Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
Species.richness
## 1
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.5
       s1
                                                            70
18
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
## 2
       s2
                                                0.7
                                                            65
19
## 3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.4
                                                            30
       s3
16
## 4
       s4
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.9
                                                            90
23
##
     Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
Inclination
## 1
                0.9
                                80
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 2
                                       NONE
                1.4
                                65
                                              TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 3
                1.7
                                90
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 4
                1.0
                                20
                                       NONE
                                                   NONE 292.112
2
     Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
## 1
                             3.99
                  0.19
                                      22.27
## 2
                  0.19
                             3.56
                                      12.49
              W
## 3
                  0.19
                             8.44
                                      39.95
              W
## 4
              W
                  0.12
                             2.53
                                      12.34
# install.packages("car")
library(car) # Anova function
# Usage:
# Model:
BIODIV.pre<- lm(Species.richness ~ P_mg_100g + Habitat.type,
data=Hogweed)
summary(BIODIV.pre)
##
## Call:
## lm(formula = Species.richness ~ P_mg_100g + Habitat.type, data =
Hogweed)
##
## Residuals:
       Min
                10 Median
                                 3Q
                                        Max
## -16.117 -5.058
                   -1.152
                              4.912 25.871
##
## Coefficients:
                              Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
##
## (Intercept)
                               25.1319
                                           1.2887 19.503 < 2e-16 ***
                               -0.2768
                                           0.1170 -2.366 0.018946 *
## P_mg_100g
```

```
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass -2.2314
                                         1.6361 -1.364 0.174184
                                         1.5449 -6.137 4.6e-09 ***
## Habitat.typetall.herbs -9.4813
                                         2.2731 -1.003 0.317153
## Habitat.typewasteland
                             -2.2797
                                         2.1460 -3.644 0.000344 ***
## Habitat.typewoodland
                             -7.8197
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
##
## Residual standard error: 7.564 on 195 degrees of freedom
## Multiple R-squared: 0.2505, Adjusted R-squared: 0.2313
## F-statistic: 13.04 on 5 and 195 DF, p-value: 5.965e-11
# Anova of the model using the package car:
Anova(BIODIV.pre)
## Anova Table (Type II tests)
##
## Response: Species.richness
                Sum Sq Df F value
##
                                      Pr(>F)
## P_mg_100g
                 320.4 1 5.5995
                                     0.01895 *
## Habitat.type 3060.2 4 13.3714 1.199e-09 ***
## Residuals
               11156.9 195
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '* 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
# Anova of the model using the built-in R function:
BIODIV.lm.aov <- anova(BIODIV.pre, test="F")
BIODIV.lm.aov
## Analysis of Variance Table
## Response: Species.richness
##
                Df Sum Sq Mean Sq F value
                                              Pr(>F)
                     668.9 668.94 11.692 0.0007644 ***
## P_mg_100g
                 1
                 4 3060.2 765.04 13.371 1.199e-09 ***
## Habitat.type
## Residuals
             195 11156.9
                             57.21
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '* 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
# Residuals
x11(width=12, height=12)
par(mfrow=c(2,2))
plot(BIODIV.pre)
```

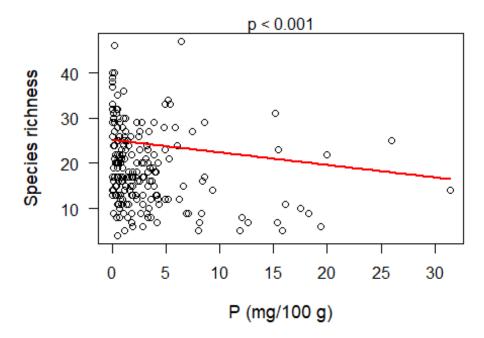


hist(resid(BIODIV.pre), breaks=20)

Histogram of resid(BIODIV.pre)



Scatterplot graph:



To construct the curve (or line) in this LM example, the dependent variable, Species richness, is on the y axis and the metric predictor variable, phosphorous, is on the x axis. The regression line is calculated using the intercept (b.0.BIODIV) plus the estimate of phosphorous (b.1.BIODIV) multiplied by x. The insertion of the P-value of ANOVA is placed according to the location of values in the ANOVA output. That is, the "P_mg_100g" is being tested in relation to "Species.richness" and it's located in the first row of the ANOVA output and its P-value on the 5th column in this row. Thus: BIODIV.lm.aov[1,5]. If you have done any data transformation before (log, square ...) you must include it in the syntax of the scatterplot, e.g.

log(Hogweed\$Species.richness). If the variable include zeros, add a constant, e.g. +1, before taking the log.

GLM (Generalized Linear Models)

Note: in GLM you must specify the distribution family of the dependent variable. Thus:

- Gaussian (normal) distribution: Continuous data (e.g. body weight, basal area, height). If the residuals don't satisfactorily fit the Gaussian distribution, you can try Gamma distribution. BUT, first of all read about both kinds of distribution before you decide which to use. Gamma doesn't accept negative values.
- Poisson: count data (e.g. species richnees). First check if the Poisson model shows overdispersion. If it does, try "quasipoisson" distribution.
- Binomial: this distribution is often used to model the number of successes
- (1) or failure (0), but also presence (1) or absence (0), in a sample. Furthermore, data regarding percentage or proportion in a sample.
- Negative BinomiaL: count data in case of overdispersion in "poisson" or "quasipoisson".

A Poisson or Binomial distribution model might be likely to show under- or overdispersion, indicating that your model fit is not satisfactory. After running the "summary", check for evidence of overdispersion. You do this by checking residuals and degrees of freedom: residual deviance/degrees of freedom << 1 (e.g. < 0.7) indicate underdispersion, while residual deviance/degrees of freedom >> 1 (e.g. > 1.3) indicate overdispersion. In such cases, you need to use "quasipoisson" or "quasibinomial" distributions instead. The model will then estimate a dispersion parameter that adjusts the variation in the data to the fixed variation of the Poisson or Binomial distribution. If you are analyzing count data (integers), you can also use the Negative Binomial distribution instead of "quasipoisson". To use Negative Binomial distribution, you use the function "glm.nb", which is the function for negative binomial glm from the package MASS.

To use Negative Binomial distribution, you just insert like this example: "glm.nb" is the function for negative binomial glm from the package MASS.

```
# install.packages(MASS)
library(MASS) # For Negative Binomial GLM
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")</pre>
head(Hogweed, 4)
##
     Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
Species.richness
## 1
       s1
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.5
                                                            70
18
## 2
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.7
       s2
                                                            65
19
## 3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.4
                                                            30
       s3
16
## 4
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.9
       s4
                                                            90
23
     Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
Inclination
## 1
                0.9
                                80
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB 295.653
```

```
2
## 2
                1.4
                               65
                                      NONE
                                             TREESHRUB
                                                        295,653
2
## 3
                1.7
                               90
                                      NONE
                                             TREESHRUB
                                                        295.653
2
## 4
                1.0
                               20
                                      NONE
                                                  NONE 292.112
2
     Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
##
## 1
              W
                  0.19
                            3.99
                                     22.27
## 2
              W
                  0.19
                            3.56
                                     12.49
## 3
                  0.19
                            8.44
                                     39.95
              W
## 4
                  0.12
                            2.53
                                     12.34
riqueza.glm<- glm.nb(Species.richness ~ P_mg_100g + Land.use,
data=Hogweed)
summary(riqueza.glm)
##
## Call:
## glm.nb(formula = Species.richness ~ P_mg_100g + Land.use, data =
Hogweed,
##
       init.theta = 7.646689121, link = log)
##
## Deviance Residuals:
       Min
                 10
                      Median
##
                                   3Q
                                           Max
## -2.5831 -0.8338 -0.1544
                               0.5509
                                        2.9755
##
## Coefficients:
##
                        Estimate Std. Error z value Pr(>|z|)
                                   0.085480 38.125 < 2e-16 ***
## (Intercept)
                        3.258909
## P mg 100g
                       -0.018549
                                   0.006899 -2.689 0.007176 **
## Land.useMAINTENANCE -0.182235
                                   0.111953 -1.628 0.103570
## Land.useNONE
                       -0.322205
                                   0.092300 -3.491 0.000482 ***
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
## (Dispersion parameter for Negative Binomial(7.6467) family taken to be
1)
##
##
       Null deviance: 230.83 on 200
                                      degrees of freedom
## Residual deviance: 206.28 on 197 degrees of freedom
## AIC: 1402.9
## Number of Fisher Scoring iterations: 1
##
##
                         7.65
##
                 Theta:
##
             Std. Err.: 1.08
##
## 2 x log-likelihood: -1392.889
```

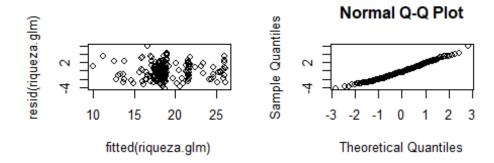
```
Anova(riqueza.glm)
## Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)
##
## Response: Species.richness
            LR Chisa Df Pr(>Chisa)
                           0.005596 **
## P mg 100g
               7.676 1
## Land.use
              13.723 2
                           0.001047 **
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
### GLM - Poisson:
riqueza.glm<- glm(Species.richness ~ P_mg_100g + Land.use, data=Hogweed,
                  family="poisson")
summary(riqueza.glm)
##
## Call:
## glm(formula = Species.richness ~ P_mg_100g + Land.use, family =
"poisson",
##
       data = Hogweed)
##
## Deviance Residuals:
       Min
                 10
##
                     Median
                                   3Q
                                           Max
## -4.1479 -1.5324 -0.3102 1.0464
                                        6.0723
##
## Coefficients:
##
                        Estimate Std. Error z value Pr(>|z|)
                        3.263022 0.041535 78.562 < 2e-16 ***
## (Intercept)
                                   0.004104 -4.988 6.11e-07 ***
## P_mg_100g
                       -0.020470
## Land.useMAINTENANCE -0.181567
                                   0.055790 -3.254 0.00114 **
                                   0.045601 -7.018 2.25e-12 ***
## Land.useNONE
                      -0.320027
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
##
## (Dispersion parameter for poisson family taken to be 1)
##
##
       Null deviance: 775.16 on 200 degrees of freedom
## Residual deviance: 686.47 on 197 degrees of freedom
## AIC: 1636.8
##
## Number of Fisher Scoring iterations: 4
library(car)
riqueza.aov <- Anova(riqueza.glm)</pre>
riqueza.aov
## Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)
##
## Response: Species.richness
```

```
## LR Chisq Df Pr(>Chisq)
## P_mg_100g 27.195 1 1.839e-07 ***
## Land.use 49.816 2 1.523e-11 ***
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
```

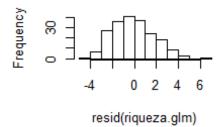
Checking the residuals and see if it does fit good to the model

```
# residuals

par(mfrow=c(2,2))
plot(fitted(riqueza.glm), resid(riqueza.glm))
qqnorm(resid(riqueza.glm))
hist(resid(riqueza.glm))
```

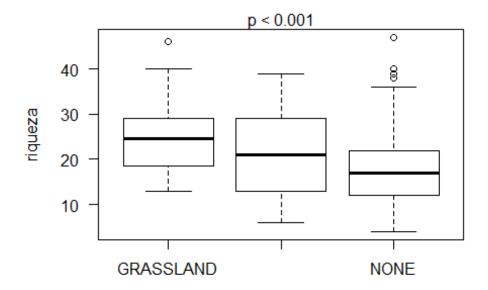


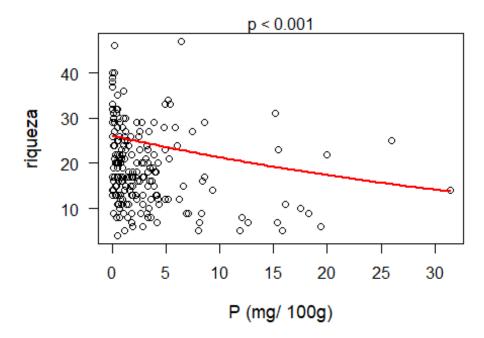
Histogram of resid(riqueza.glr



```
# Boxplot

par(mfrow=c(1,1))
boxplot(Hogweed$Species.richness ~ Hogweed$Land.use, las=1,
ylab="riqueza")
mtext(ifelse(riqueza.aov[2,3]<0.001, "p < 0.001",
paste("p = ", round(riqueza.aov[2,3],3))))</pre>
```





Note 3.: the graph construction follows the principles described with LM previously. If you have used a transformation or a link function (other than "=") in the model, you can include it in the scatterplot syntax, e.g.log (Species.richness). But if you want to plot the original values of the dependent variable, you can do that, too, you just need to back-transform the model predictions to the original scale. In this case you need to transform from the log-scale (used in the Poisson model) to the untransformed species richness used in the scatterplot. That's why we need the "exp" function in the example above.

GLMM (Generalized Linear Mixed Models)

Note 1: Like GLM, the GLMM also require to specify the distribution family (e.g. Poisson), but they don't accept "quasipoisson" or "quasibinomial". If poisson doesn't fit the data because of overdispersion, try negative binomial distribution as explained in GLM section. The syntax is the same: just insert the argument "nb". Example: basalarea1<- glmer.nb(..., Do not write family name).

GLMM indication: when you have pseudoreplicates. It's very common in ecological field research to use subplots within each site and these subplots cannot be considered as real replicates. So, a mixed model is appropriate to treat this situation. The definition of what variable is a fixed effect (e.g. in the example below it is "Hogweed.cover" (cover of giant hogweed) and "Habitat.type") and what is random effect (e.g. in the example below "Study.area") depends on your research questions and study design. Usually, design factors, such as "block" or "study area" will be

random effects, and the variables that you are really interested in (treatments, soil parameters etc.) will be fixed effects. BUT, read about random and fixed effects before constructing your model.

When the command line doesn't end in the same row, but continues in the next one (like the first command of the GLMM example below), select and press the command of both two lines together. We broke some command lines here to fit in the R script style.

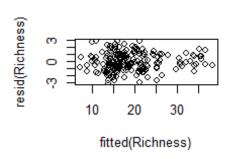
```
### GLMM usage:
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")</pre>
head(Hogweed, 4)
     Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
Species.richness
## 1
       s1
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.5
                                                            70
18
## 2
       s2
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.7
                                                            65
19
## 3
       s3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.4
                                                            30
16
## 4
       s4
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.9
                                                            90
23
##
     Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
Inclination
## 1
                0.9
                                80
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 2
                1.4
                                65
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 3
                1.7
                                       NONE
                                90
                                              TREESHRUB 295.653
2
## 4
                1.0
                                20
                                       NONE
                                                   NONE 292.112
2
     Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
##
                             3.99
## 1
                  0.19
                                      22.27
              W
## 2
              W
                  0.19
                             3.56
                                      12.49
## 3
              W
                  0.19
                            8.44
                                      39.95
## 4
              W
                  0.12
                             2.53
                                      12.34
library(lme4) # glmer
## Loading required package: Matrix
library(car) # Anova
Richness <- glmer(Species.richness ~ scale(Hogweed.cover) + Habitat.type
                  (1|Study.area), data=Hogweed, family="poisson")
# Here, the metric predictor variable (Hogweed.cover) was scaled to avoid
# problems in the calculation of the model
```

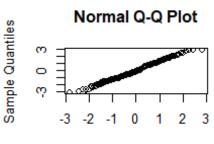
```
summary(Richness)
## Generalized linear mixed model fit by maximum likelihood (Laplace
##
     Approximation) [glmerMod]
##
   Family: poisson (log)
## Formula: Species.richness ~ scale(Hogweed.cover) + Habitat.type + (1 |
##
       Study.area)
      Data: Hogweed
##
##
##
                       logLik deviance df.resid
        AIC
                 BIC
##
     1352.4
              1375.5
                       -669.2
                                1338.4
                                            194
##
## Scaled residuals:
                10 Median
       Min
                                30
                                       Max
## -2.6389 -0.9970 -0.1876 0.9007
                                    3.3432
##
## Random effects:
## Groups
               Name
                           Variance Std.Dev.
## Study.area (Intercept) 0.08313 0.2883
## Number of obs: 201, groups: Study.area, 20
##
## Fixed effects:
##
                             Estimate Std. Error z value Pr(>|z|)
                                         0.07660 41.429 < 2e-16 ***
## (Intercept)
                              3.17346
                                         0.02052 -3.892 9.94e-05 ***
## scale(Hogweed.cover)
                             -0.07988
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass -0.13191
                                         0.05530 -2.385
                                                           0.0171 *
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
                             -0.41489
                                         0.05828 -7.118 1.09e-12 ***
                                         0.07605 -2.378
                                                           0.0174 *
## Habitat.typewasteland
                             -0.18083
## Habitat.typewoodland
                             -0.50020
                                         0.07356 -6.800 1.05e-11 ***
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
##
## Correlation of Fixed Effects:
               (Intr) sc(H.) Hbtt.typr. Hbtt.typt. Hbtt.typws
##
## scl(Hgwd.c) 0.183
## Hbtt.typrd. -0.424 -0.342
## Hbtt.typtl. -0.415 -0.394
                            0.567
## Hbtt.typwst -0.279 0.057
                              0.416
                                         0.316
## Hbtt.typwdl -0.281 -0.042 0.354
                                         0.412
                                                    0.269
Richness.aov <- Anova(Richness, Type="II")
Richness.aov
## Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II Wald chisquare tests)
##
## Response: Species.richness
                         Chisq Df Pr(>Chisq)
## scale(Hogweed.cover) 15.149 1 9.937e-05 ***
## Habitat.type
                        76.133 4 1.147e-15 ***
```

```
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1

# Residuals

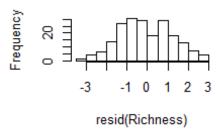
par(mfrow=c(2,2))
plot(fitted(Richness), resid(Richness))
qqnorm(resid(Richness))
qqline(resid(Richness))
hist(resid(Richness))
```





Theoretical Quantiles

Histogram of resid(Richness

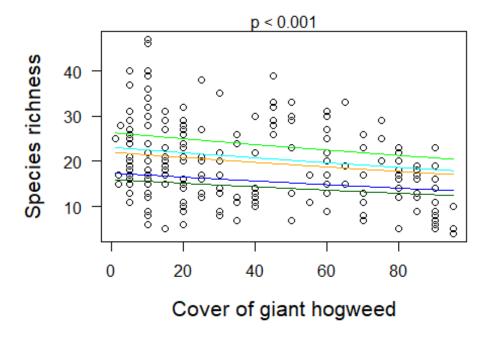


```
### Scatterplots ###
```

```
# With the syntax below you can construct graphs of the relation of the
depenent
# variable with a metric predictor variable. This can be done for all
levels of
# the categorical predictor variable (here: Habitat.type). To construct
the graph
# you can just select and run all of the command lines below.

b0<- coef(summary(Richness))[1,1] # intercept (habitat "agricultural
grassland")
b1<- coef(summary(Richness))[2,1] # estimate of hogweed cover
b2<- coef(summary(Richness))[3,1] # estimate of habitat "ruderal
grassland"
b3<- coef(summary(Richness))[4,1] # estimate of habitat "tall herbs"</pre>
```

```
b4<- coef(summary(Richness))[5,1] # estimate of habitat "wasteland"
b5<- coef(summary(Richness))[6,1] # estimate of habitat "woodland"
x11(width=14, height=12)
plot(Hogweed$Species.richness ~ Hogweed$Hogweed.cover, las=1,
     ylab="Species richness", xlab="Cover of giant hogweed", cex.lab=1.3)
# The model that we apply here used poisson distribution which, by
default.
# includes a log-link (i.e. log transformation of the dependent
variable).
# Thus, we need to use exp() to back-transform the values predicted by
the model.
# to the original values of species richness.
mean <- mean(Hogweed$Hogweed.cover)</pre>
sd <- sd(Hogweed$Hogweed.cover)</pre>
curve(exp(b0 + b1*(x-mean)/sd), add=TRUE, col="green") # curve for
agricultural grassland
curve(exp(b0 + b2 + b1*(x-mean)/sd), add=TRUE, col="cyan") # curve for
ruderal grassland
curve(exp(b0 + b3 + + b1*(x-mean)/sd), add=TRUE, col="blue") # curve for
tall-herb stands
curve(exp(b0 + b4 + + b1*(x-mean)/sd), add=TRUE, col="orange") # curve
for wasteland
curve(exp(b0 + b5 + + b1*(x-mean)/sd), add=TRUE, col="darkgreen") # curve
for woodland
mtext(ifelse(Richness.aov[1,3]<0.001, "p < 0.001",
      paste("p = ", round(Richness.aov[1,3],3))))
```



Note 2: the graph construction follows the principles previously described for LM. For further details type the following into your internet search engine: "how construct scatterplots for Mixed models - GLMM? If you have transformed your data, include it in the scatterplot syntax, e.g. log(Data.h3\$area basal+1), OR back-transform the predicted values to the original scale (as in the previous example).

GLMM-PQL (Fit GLMM using Penalized Quasi-Likelihood - PQL)

This type of GLMM is used when you need to compute a mixed model for a non-normal dispersion (e.g. poisson, binomial), it is necessary to use a generalized mixed model that allows the inclusion of correlation structures to account for spatial or temporal effects in the random effects and residuals of the model. The usual functions lmer and glmer of the package lme4 do not allow you to include such correlation structures. Thus, you can adjust Partial Quasi-likelihoods for glmm with the function glmmPQL of the package MASS. The most used spatial and temporal correlation structures for a wide range of situations are, respectively, corExp (exponential spatial correlation structure) and corAR1 (correlation structure of first order for time series) of the package nlme.

The glmmPQL approximates a quasi-likelihood by iterative fitting of (re)weighted linear mixed effects (lme) models based on the fit of Glm. Thus, it estimates the fixed effects parameters by fitting a Glm with its incorporated correlation (variance-covariance) structure. This constructs an Lme model and refits it to re-estimate the variance-covariance structure, utilizing the variance structure from the previous Glm.

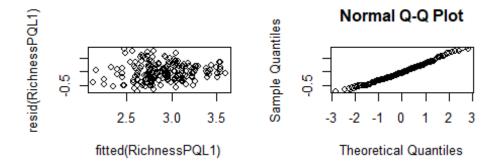
The iterations continue until the fit improvement is below a threshold or a defined number of iterations has occurred. Therefore, this approach accommodates heterogeneity and spatial/temporal autocorrelation in the model. However, it worth being aware of the fit of PQL generalization for Poisson models, since it commonly performs poorly. If your performance with glmmPQL is poor using the Poisson model, take a look at glmmTMB and glmmADMB packages and functions. For more information on usage of glmmPQL, other models and correlation structures to account for spatial and temporal autocorrelation of residuals, read Dormann et al. (2007).

GLMM - PQL: Temporal autocorrelation

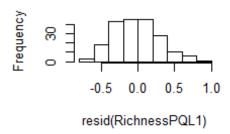
```
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".") head(Hogweed) install.packages("MASS") install.packages("nlme") install.packages("lme4")
```

```
library(MASS) # PQL Estimation Of Generalized Linear Mixed Models
(qLmmPQL)
library(nlme) # corAR1 (autocorrelation structure of order 1.
              # For temporal autocorrelation correction)
library(lme4) # glmer
RichnessPQL1 <- glmmPQL(Species.richness ~ scale(Hogweed.cover) +</pre>
                         Habitat.type, random=~1 Study.area,
data=Hogweed,
                        family="poisson", correlation=corAR1())
summary(RichnessPQL1)
## Linear mixed-effects model fit by maximum likelihood
   Data: Hogweed
    AIC BIC logLik
##
##
     NA NA
##
## Random effects:
## Formula: ~1 | Study.area
          (Intercept) Residual
##
## StdDev:
              0.25502 1.360019
##
## Correlation Structure: AR(1)
## Formula: ~1 | Study.area
## Parameter estimate(s):
        Phi
##
## 0.212907
## Variance function:
## Structure: fixed weights
## Formula: ~invwt
## Fixed effects: Species.richness ~ scale(Hogweed.cover) + Habitat.type
                          Value Std.Error DF t-value p-value
```

```
## (Intercept)
                              3.179347 0.08077289 176 39.36156
                                                                0.0000
## scale(Hogweed.cover)
                             -0.084974 0.02702220 176 -3.14458
                                                                0.0020
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass -0.113853 0.07240569 176 -1.57243
                                                                0.1176
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
                             -0.418886 0.07631617 176 -5.48882
                                                                 0.0000
                             -0.154868 0.10070796 176 -1.53779
## Habitat.typewasteland
                                                                 0.1259
## Habitat.typewoodland
                             -0.471932 0.09683872 176 -4.87338
                                                                0.0000
## Correlation:
##
                             (Intr) sc(H.) Hbtt.typr. Hbtt.typt.
Hbtt.typws
## scale(Hogweed.cover)
                              0.240
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass -0.523 -0.343
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
                             -0.507 -0.409 0.561
## Habitat.typewasteland
                             -0.337 0.055 0.408
                                                       0.299
## Habitat.typewoodland
                             -0.357 -0.072 0.368
                                                       0.440
                                                                   0.260
##
## Standardized Within-Group Residuals:
          Min
                      Q1
                                Med
                                            Q3
                                                      Max
## -1.9455147 -0.7636449 -0.1452796 0.6615598 2.3691106
##
## Number of Observations: 201
## Number of Groups: 20
class(RichnessPQL1)="lme"
anova(object=RichnessPQL1,test="Chisq")
##
                        numDF denDF F-value p-value
## (Intercept)
                            1
                                176 2142.125 <.0001
## scale(Hogweed.cover)
                            1
                                176
                                      29.293
                                             <.0001
## Habitat.type
                                176
                                      10.733 <.0001
                            4
# Residuals
par(mfrow=c(2,2))
plot(fitted(RichnessPQL1), resid(RichnessPQL1))
qqnorm(resid(RichnessPQL1))
qqline(resid(RichnessPQL1))
hist(resid(RichnessPQL1))
```



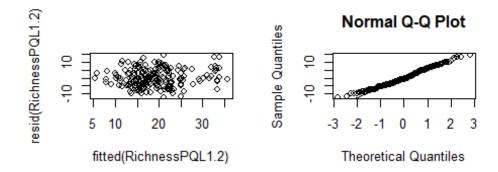
Histogram of resid(RichnessPC



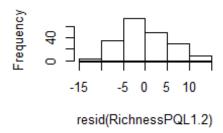
Note: Fitting a "lme" class for the glmmPQL is not recommended as the most appropriate way to acquire p-values from anova of the model above. Here we can compute a lme model for the same variables of the glmmPQL model and compare the outcomes of the anova of both models. Despite lme requiring data to conform to assumptions of normality, we can use this model for a dataset where Y is discrete (Poisson), once the residual fit is as close as possible to normal, which were already complied using the residuals of glmmPQL model.. Let's see.

```
RichnessPQL1.2 <- lme(Species.richness ~ scale(Hogweed.cover) +</pre>
                          Habitat.type, random=~1 Study.area,
                          data=Hogweed, correlation = corAR1())
summary(RichnessPQL1.2)
## Linear mixed-effects model fit by REML
##
    Data: Hogweed
##
          AIC
                    BIC
                           logLik
     1316.934 1346.391 -649.4672
##
##
## Random effects:
    Formula: ~1 | Study.area
##
           (Intercept) Residual
##
## StdDev:
              5.656911 5.910775
##
## Correlation Structure: AR(1)
    Formula: ~1 | Study.area
```

```
Parameter estimate(s):
##
         Phi
## 0.1828919
## Fixed effects: Species.richness ~ scale(Hogweed.cover) + Habitat.type
##
                                 Value Std.Error DF
                                                       t-value p-value
                             24.741612 1.7117346 176 14.454117
## (Intercept)
                                                                0.0000
## scale(Hogweed.cover)
                             -1.420397 0.4884303 176 -2.908086
                                                                0.0041
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass -2.853129 1.4641553 176 -1.948652
                                                                0.0529
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
                             -7.851275 1.4603586 176 -5.376265
                                                                0.0000
                             -3.446089 2.0679085 176 -1.666461
## Habitat.typewasteland
                                                                0.0974
                             -9.293588 1.8178651 176 -5.112364
## Habitat.typewoodland
                                                                0.0000
## Correlation:
##
                             (Intr) sc(H.) Hbtt.typr. Hbtt.typt.
Hbtt.typws
## scale(Hogweed.cover)
                              0.200
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass -0.517 -0.332
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
                             -0.529 -0.417 0.618
## Habitat.typewasteland
                             -0.345 0.046 0.412
                                                       0.352
                                                       0.506
                             -0.398 -0.081 0.431
## Habitat.typewoodland
                                                                   0.317
##
## Standardized Within-Group Residuals:
          Min
                      01
                                Med
                                            03
                                                      Max
## -2.0616284 -0.7119363 -0.1222464 0.6971461 2.5063006
##
## Number of Observations: 201
## Number of Groups: 20
anova(RichnessPQL1.2)
##
                        numDF denDF
                                      F-value p-value
## (Intercept)
                                176 212.89541 <.0001
                            1
## scale(Hogweed.cover)
                            1
                                    27.24646 <.0001
                                176
## Habitat.type
                            4
                                176
                                    10.43767 <.0001
# Residuals
par(mfrow=c(2,2))
plot(fitted(RichnessPQL1.2), resid(RichnessPQL1.2))
qqnorm(resid(RichnessPQL1.2))
qqline(resid(RichnessPQL1.2))
hist(resid(RichnessPQL1.2))
```



Histogram of resid(RichnessPQI



Overall, we can see that both the lme and glmmPQL models in this example display well-fitting residuals and the anova outcomes of both provide very similar results.

Wald Test for GLMM-PQL

The recommended way to test hypotheses (H0/H1) for glmmPQL, is to compute the Wald between the Wald approach and a typical anova, is that Wald tests encompass marginal tests of parameters, i.e. as they show up in the summary of the model in Wald outcome versus nested model comparisons (either F or Chisq (likedlihood ratio)) in anova() function.

```
##
     AIC BIC logLik
      NA NA
##
##
## Random effects:
   Formula: ~1 | Study.area
##
           (Intercept) Residual
               0.25502 1.360019
## StdDev:
##
## Correlation Structure: AR(1)
## Formula: ~1 | Study.area
    Parameter estimate(s):
##
##
        Phi
## 0.212907
## Variance function:
## Structure: fixed weights
## Formula: ~invwt
## Fixed effects: Species.richness ~ scale(Hogweed.cover) + Habitat.type
##
                                  Value Std.Error DF t-value p-value
## (Intercept)
                              3.179347 0.08077289 176 39.36156 0.0000
## scale(Hogweed.cover)
                              -0.084974 0.02702220 176 -3.14458
                                                                 0.0020
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass -0.113853 0.07240569 176 -1.57243
                                                                 0.1176
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
## Habitat.typewasteland
                             -0.418886 0.07631617 176 -5.48882
                                                                 0.0000
                             -0.154868 0.10070796 176 -1.53779
                                                                 0.1259
                              -0.471932 0.09683872 176 -4.87338
## Habitat.typewoodland
                                                                 0.0000
## Correlation:
##
                              (Intr) sc(H.) Hbtt.typr. Hbtt.typt.
Hbtt.typws
## scale(Hogweed.cover)
                              0.240
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass -0.523 -0.343
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
                             -0.507 -0.409 0.561
                                                        0.299
## Habitat.typewasteland
                             -0.337 0.055 0.408
## Habitat.typewoodland
                             -0.357 -0.072 0.368
                                                        0.440
                                                                   0.260
##
## Standardized Within-Group Residuals:
                      01
                                Med
                                             Q3
                                                       Max
## -1.9455147 -0.7636449 -0.1452796 0.6615598 2.3691106
##
## Number of Observations: 201
## Number of Groups: 20
```

Since the main statistic of interest is the Wald approach (t for PQL) for the fixed effects parameters, we can firstly fit a crude Wald. The summary of the model gives us crude (Wald) estimates of the p-values for each individual parameter:

```
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
                             -0.41888568 0.07631617 176 -5.488820
## Habitat.typewasteland
                             -0.15486750 0.10070796 176 -1.537788
                             -0.47193166 0.09683872 176 -4.873378
## Habitat.typewoodland
                                  p-value
## (Intercept)
                             3.647255e-89
## scale(Hogweed.cover)
                             1.952741e-03
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass 1.176467e-01
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
                             1.393556e-07
## Habitat.typewasteland
                             1.258963e-01
## Habitat.typewoodland
                             2.436558e-06
```

One could be interested in the investigation of the main effects as a whole. Thus, we use the function "wald.test" of the package and in order test the influence of the factor as whole using the Wald Z and X² (Wald Chi-squared) test, which is an approach analogous to an ANOVA. In function "wald.test" the following parameters are used:

fixed effects parameter estimates (b) the variance-covariance matrix (Sigma) and (c) a specification of which fixed factor terms (Terms) to combine for the Wald statistic. For more information, please, read the R documentation of the package and in the wald test section.

You define the terms by designating the order in which the coefficients of interest appear in the summary of the model. For instance, the predictor scale(Hogweed.cover) is the second coefficient after the intercept and Habitat.typewoodland is sixth and last. If we are interested in the main effects of the groups of parameters as whole, then we write "Terms=2:6". It is important to notice that the Wald X^2 test is suitable only in the absence of overdispersion in the model. When the model is overdispersed the suitable approach is to use Wald F and X^2 tests.

The global p-value of Wald confirms the overall significant effect of the numeric (Hogweed.cover) and categorical (Habitat.type) predictors, as found in the other models (glmmPQL and lme), with Species.richness as response variable.

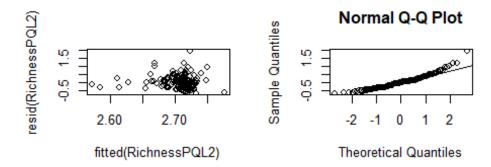
To assess the confidence intervals for model estimates based on Wald statistics.

```
library(gmodels)
ci(RichnessPQL1, method="Wald")
##
                               Estimate
                                          CI lower
                                                      CI upper Std.
Error
## (Intercept)
                             3.17934701 3.0199389 3.33875510
0.08077289
## scale(Hogweed.cover)
                            -0.08497357 -0.1383028 -0.03164432
0.02702220
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass -0.11385291 -0.2567480 0.02904221
0.07240569
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
                             -0.41888568 -0.5694983 -0.26827310
0.07631617
                            -0.15486750 -0.3536181 0.04388312
## Habitat.typewasteland
0.10070796
## Habitat.typewoodland
                             -0.47193166 -0.6630462 -0.28081712
0.09683872
##
                                     p-value
## (Intercept)
                            176 3.647255e-89
## scale(Hogweed.cover)
                            176 1.952741e-03
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass 176 1.176467e-01
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
                            176 1.393556e-07
                            176 1.258963e-01
## Habitat.typewasteland
## Habitat.typewoodland
                            176 2.436558e-06
```

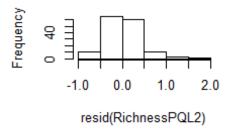
```
GLMM - PQL: Spatial autocorrelation
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG, 4)
            type Plot Site
                                         Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea_triplinervia
                                                       8
                                                             27.12
10
                                                            39.15
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                   Aniba_firmula
                                                            33.93
                                                       10
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                    Annona cacans
                                                       10
                                                            40.43
    Mean_diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation_mean
##
Temperature mean
## 1
            6.357
                      0.058
                                    7
                                                   1250
24.4
## 2
                       0.120
                                   12
            6.524
                                                   1250
24.4
## 3
            6.632
                      0.090
                                   10
                                                   1250
24.4
## 4
                                   19
            6.626
                      0.128
                                                   1250
24.4
    Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x
                                                 utm.y local.utm.x
## 1
         6.94
                    14.34
                              0
                                      0 747923 7807727
                                                            747923
         2.74
                    6.94
                             -10
## 2
                                       0 747923 7807727
                                                            747913
## 3
         1.71
                    2.35
                             -20
                                       0 747923 7807727
                                                            747903
## 4
         1.60
                    2.47
                             -30
                                     0 747923 7807727
                                                            747893
```

```
##
     local.utm.y
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
library(MASS) # PQL Estimation Of Generalized Linear Mixed Models
(glmmPQL)
library(nlme) # corExp (autocorrelation structure of order 1.
              # For temporal autocorrelation correction)
library(lme4) # qlmer
RichnessPQL2 <- glmmPQL(Richness ~ Mortality + Recruitment, random=~1
                          Site, data=BIOVEG, family=poisson(),
                          correlation = corExp())
## iteration 1
## iteration 2
## iteration 3
summary(RichnessPQL2)
## Linear mixed-effects model fit by maximum likelihood
    Data: BIOVEG
##
     AIC BIC logLik
##
      NA
         NA
                 NA
##
## Random effects:
  Formula: ~1 | Site
            (Intercept) Residual
## StdDev: 2.513287e-05 1.568849
##
## Correlation Structure: Exponential spatial correlation
## Formula: ~1 | Site
## Parameter estimate(s):
##
      range
## 2.114817
## Variance function:
## Structure: fixed weights
## Formula: ~invwt
## Fixed effects: Richness ~ Mortality + Recruitment
##
                    Value Std.Error DF t-value p-value
## (Intercept) 2.7193377 0.07676437 145 35.42448 0.0000
## Mortality
             -0.0076205 0.00877996 145 -0.86795
                                                   0.3869
## Recruitment 0.0044188 0.01109908 145 0.39812 0.6911
## Correlation:
##
               (Intr) Mrtlty
               -0.290
## Mortality
```

```
## Recruitment -0.366 -0.075
##
## Standardized Within-Group Residuals:
           Min
                        Q1
                                    Med
                                                 Q3
                                                             Max
## -1.68788217 -0.78368147 -0.02639946 0.48572389
##
## Number of Observations: 150
## Number of Groups: 3
class(RichnessPQL2)="lme"
anova(RichnessPQL2,test="Chisq")
##
               numDF denDF
                              F-value p-value
## (Intercept)
                   1
                       145 1629.6022 <.0001
                                       0.4021
## Mortality
                   1
                        145
                               0.7061
                               0.1585
## Recruitment
                        145
                                       0.6911
# Residuals
par(mfrow=c(2,2))
plot(fitted(RichnessPQL2), resid(RichnessPQL2))
qqnorm(resid(RichnessPQL2))
qqline(resid(RichnessPQL2))
hist(resid(RichnessPQL2))
```



Histogram of resid(RichnessPC



The model RichnessPQL2 above did not show an acceptable residual fit in the Q.Q Plot and Histogram of residuals. In this case we then need to calculate a glmmPQL negative

binomial. Firstly, we compute a glm model for the same set of fixed effect variables to fit the Theta parameter of negative binomial dispersion.

```
RichnessPQL2.1 <- glm.nb(Richness ~ Mortality + Recruitment, data=BIOVEG)</pre>
theta<-RichnessPQL2.1$theta
RichnessPQL2.1.1 <- glmmPQL(Richness ~ Mortality + Recruitment,</pre>
random=~1
                          Site, data=BIOVEG, family=quasipoisson(),
                        correlation = corExp())
## iteration 1
## iteration 2
## iteration 3
summary(RichnessPQL2.1.1)
## Linear mixed-effects model fit by maximum likelihood
    Data: BIOVEG
##
     AIC BIC logLik
##
      NA
         NA
                 NA
##
## Random effects:
## Formula: ~1 | Site
            (Intercept) Residual
##
## StdDev: 2.513287e-05 1.568849
##
## Correlation Structure: Exponential spatial correlation
## Formula: ~1 | Site
## Parameter estimate(s):
##
      range
## 2.114817
## Variance function:
## Structure: fixed weights
## Formula: ~invwt
## Fixed effects: Richness ~ Mortality + Recruitment
                    Value Std.Error DF t-value p-value
##
## (Intercept) 2.7193377 0.07676437 145 35.42448 0.0000
## Mortality
             -0.0076205 0.00877996 145 -0.86795 0.3869
## Recruitment 0.0044188 0.01109908 145 0.39812 0.6911
## Correlation:
               (Intr) Mrtlty
##
## Mortality
               -0.290
## Recruitment -0.366 -0.075
##
## Standardized Within-Group Residuals:
                                                 Q3
           Min
                        Q1
                                   Med
                                                            Max
## -1.68788217 -0.78368147 -0.02639946 0.48572389 4.85960190
##
```

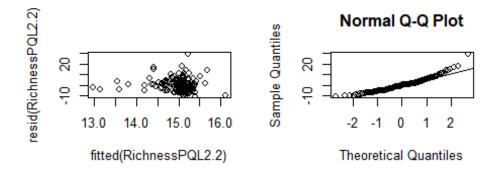
```
## Number of Observations: 150
## Number of Groups: 3
class(RichnessPQL2.1.1)="lme"
anova(object=RichnessPQL2.1.1,test="Chisq")
               numDF denDF
##
                             F-value p-value
## (Intercept)
                       145 1629.6022 <.0001
                   1
## Mortality
                   1
                       145
                              0.7061
                                      0.4021
## Recruitment
                   1
                       145
                              0.1585 0.6911
```

The outcomes of both the glmmPQL model with Poisson and Negative binomial dispersion were the same.

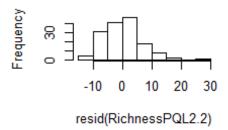
Similar to the first example of glmmPQL above, we run a lme model for the same set of variables and compare the residuals and anova outcomes of both models. Despite the fact that lme assumes a normal distribution, we can still consider this model if the residuals reasonably conform with a normal fit.

```
RichnessPQL2.2 <- lme(Richness ~ Mortality + Recruitment, random=~1
                        Site, data=BIOVEG, correlation
                      = corExp())
summary(RichnessPQL2.2)
## Linear mixed-effects model fit by REML
## Data: BIOVEG
                   BIC
##
         AIC
                          logLik
    909.0265 926.9691 -448.5133
##
##
## Random effects:
## Formula: ~1 | Site
           (Intercept) Residual
## StdDev: 0.003170964 6.205825
##
## Correlation Structure: Exponential spatial correlation
## Formula: ~1 | Site
## Parameter estimate(s):
##
   range
## 2.19089
## Fixed effects: Richness ~ Mortality + Recruitment
                  Value Std.Error DF
                                       t-value p-value
## (Intercept) 15.147875 1.1779626 145 12.859385 0.0000
             -0.113682 0.1260718 145 -0.901720 0.3687
## Mortality
## Recruitment 0.072715 0.1686360 145 0.431194 0.6670
## Correlation:
##
               (Intr) Mrtlty
## Mortality
              -0.298
## Recruitment -0.350 -0.076
## Standardized Within-Group Residuals:
          Min
                        Q1
                                                Q3
```

```
## -1.67557693 -0.75056004 -0.02212395 0.47904130 4.79686539
##
## Number of Observations: 150
## Number of Groups: 3
anova(RichnessPQL2.2)
##
               numDF denDF
                              F-value p-value
## (Intercept)
                   1
                       145 209.95041
                                      <.0001
## Mortality
                   1
                       145
                              0.75942
                                        0.385
## Recruitment
                       145
                              0.18593
                                        0.667
# Residuals
par(mfrow=c(2,2))
plot(fitted(RichnessPQL2.2), resid(RichnessPQL2.2))
qqnorm(resid(RichnessPQL2.2))
qqline(resid(RichnessPQL2.2))
hist(resid(RichnessPQL2.2))
```



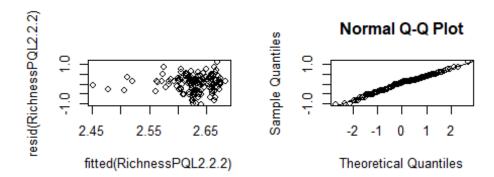
Histogram of resid(RichnessPQI



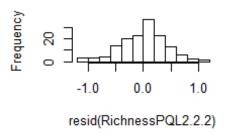
The anova output of the lme model, similar to those of the glmmPQL with Richness as response variable, shows that none of the predictors are significantly related to this response variable. However, the residual fit of this lme model is also not as good as those of the glmmPQL models for this response variable. Thus, we can try to log-transform Richness, though log transformations of discrete data are largely not advised and their use demands a cautious approach.

```
RichnessPQL2.2.2 <- lme(log(Richness) ~ Mortality + Recruitment,
random=~1
                        Site, data=BIOVEG, correlation
                      = corExp())
summary(RichnessPQL2.2.2)
## Linear mixed-effects model fit by REML
##
    Data: BIOVEG
##
         AIC
                  BIC
                         logLik
##
     121.274 139.2166 -54.63701
##
## Random effects:
   Formula: ~1 | Site
           (Intercept)
                       Residual
##
## StdDev: 0.04515893 0.4084216
##
## Correlation Structure: Exponential spatial correlation
## Formula: ~1 | Site
## Parameter estimate(s):
##
      range
## 1.907718
## Fixed effects: log(Richness) ~ Mortality + Recruitment
                    Value Std.Error DF t-value p-value
##
## (Intercept) 2.6515169 0.07939254 145 33.39756 0.0000
             -0.0092208 0.00874206 145 -1.05476 0.2933
## Mortality
## Recruitment 0.0025622 0.01170855 145 0.21883 0.8271
## Correlation:
##
               (Intr) Mrtlty
## Mortality
               -0.308
## Recruitment -0.359 -0.074
##
## Standardized Within-Group Residuals:
          Min
                      Q1
                                Med
                                            Q3
                                                      Max
## -2.5263531 -0.7349958 0.1569121 0.6254959 2.7853229
##
## Number of Observations: 150
## Number of Groups: 3
anova(RichnessPQL2.2.2)
##
               numDF denDF
                             F-value p-value
## (Intercept)
                   1
                       145 1446.6712 <.0001
## Mortality
                       145
                              1.0846 0.2994
## Recruitment
                   1
                       145
                              0.0479 0.8271
# Residuals
par(mfrow=c(2,2))
plot(fitted(RichnessPQL2.2.2), resid(RichnessPQL2.2.2))
qqnorm(resid(RichnessPQL2.2.2))
```

qqline(resid(RichnessPQL2.2.2)) hist(resid(RichnessPQL2.2.2))



listogram of resid(RichnessPQL



For this lme model, the log transformation of Richness worked well. The residuals are better fitted and the anova output maintains non-significance for the predictor variables, similar to the previous glmmPQL and lme models. This suggests that there is no great distortion of the empirical condition of the data in the model after the log transformation.

Wald Test

Now, let's compute the Wald test for the model "RichnessPQL2.1.1"

```
summary(RichnessPQL2.1.1)
## Linear mixed-effects model fit by maximum likelihood
    Data: BIOVEG
     AIC BIC logLik
      NA
          NA
                 NA
##
##
## Random effects:
##
    Formula: ~1 | Site
            (Intercept) Residual
##
## StdDev: 2.513287e-05 1.568849
##
```

```
## Correlation Structure: Exponential spatial correlation
## Formula: ~1 | Site
## Parameter estimate(s):
##
      range
## 2.114817
## Variance function:
## Structure: fixed weights
## Formula: ~invwt
## Fixed effects: Richness ~ Mortality + Recruitment
##
                    Value Std.Error DF t-value p-value
## (Intercept) 2.7193377 0.07676437 145 35.42448 0.0000
## Mortality
               -0.0076205 0.00877996 145 -0.86795
                                                   0.3869
## Recruitment 0.0044188 0.01109908 145 0.39812
## Correlation:
##
               (Intr) Mrtlty
## Mortality
               -0.290
## Recruitment -0.366 -0.075
##
## Standardized Within-Group Residuals:
           Min
                        Q1
                                   Med
                                                Q3
                                                           Max
##
## -1.68788217 -0.78368147 -0.02639946 0.48572389 4.85960190
##
## Number of Observations: 150
## Number of Groups: 3
wald2<-wald.test(b=fixef(RichnessPQL2.1.1),
                Sigma=vcov(RichnessPQL2.1.1), Terms=2:3)
wald2
## Wald test:
## -----
##
## Chi-squared test:
## X2 = 0.88, df = 2, P(> X2) = 0.64
```

The global p-value of Wald confirms the non-significant effects of the predictors (Mortality and Recruitment) as found in the previous glmmPQL and lme models for this set of variables.

```
# Confidence Interval under Wald fit.

ci(RichnessPQL2.1.1, method=Wald)

## Estimate CI lower CI upper Std. Error DF

## (Intercept) 2.719337688 2.56761601 2.871059367 0.076764373 145

## Mortality -0.007620525 -0.02497375 0.009732702 0.008779955 145

## Recruitment 0.004418759 -0.01751812 0.026355633 0.011099076 145

## p-value

## (Intercept) 2.826205e-73
```

```
## Mortality 3.868582e-01
## Recruitment 6.911276e-01
```

Useful links and examples:

https://rpubs.com/bbolker/glmmchapter

http://www.flutterbys.com.au/stats/tut/tut11.2a.html

https://bbolker.github.io/mixedmodels-misc/glmmFAQ.html

https://bbolker.github.io/mixedmodels-misc/ecostats_chap.html

https://www.rdocumentation.org/packages/MASS/versions/7.3-47/topics/glmmPQL

Recommended Reading:

Box, G.E.P., Jenkins, G.M., and Reinsel G.C. (1994) "Time Series Analysis: Forecasting and Control", 3rd Edition, Holden-Day.

Pinheiro, J.C., and Bates, D.M. (2000) "Mixed-Effects Models in S and S-PLUS", Springer, esp. pp. 235, 397.

Cressie, N.A.C. (1993), "Statistics for Spatial Data", J. Wiley & Sons.

Venables, W.N. and Ripley, B.D. (2002) "Modern Applied Statistics with S", 4th Edition, Springer-Verlag.

LOGISTIC REGRESSION

Hypothesis test: in a period of 5 years do the continuous variables (mean diameter and mean precipitation) affect the likelihood of tree recruitment, i.e., survival, growth and achieve a minimum diameter criteria (e.g. > 15 cm). That is, we want to know if in a five years-period of forest monitoring, do two continuous variables (Mean_diameter + Precipitation_mean) and one categorical (type of vegetation) determine the success of a trees individual likelihood of recruitment (0 indicates the absence of recruitment in a subplot and 1 the presence).

```
Lreg <- read.table("Logit2.csv", header=T, sep=";", dec=".")</pre>
head(Lreg,4)
##
            type1 Site Mean_diameter Precipitation_mean Rec.binar
## 1 Ombrophilous AREA1
                                11.657
                                                       1142
## 2 Ombrophilous AREA1
                                                                    1
                                13.793
                                                       1142
## 3 Ombrophilous AREA1
                                17.928
                                                       1142
                                                                    1
## 4 Ombrophilous AREA1
                                12.212
                                                       1142
```

```
Recrut.binar<- glm(Rec.binar ~ Mean_diameter + Precipitation_mean +
                                type1, data=Lreg,family="binomial")
Recrut.binar
##
          glm(formula = Rec.binar ~ Mean_diameter + Precipitation_mean +
## Call:
       type1, family = "binomial", data = Lreg)
##
##
## Coefficients:
##
          (Intercept)
                            Mean_diameter Precipitation_mean
                                                    -0.001657
##
             4.431746
                                -0.143722
                        type1Semideciduos
## type10mbrophilous
            -0.825271
##
                                -0.120710
##
## Degrees of Freedom: 449 Total (i.e. Null); 445 Residual
## Null Deviance:
                        586.9
## Residual Deviance: 553.5
                                AIC: 563.5
```

According to the output, the model is logit(pi) = 4.43 + -0.14 *Mean_diameter + 0.001* Precipitation_mean - -0.82 *typeOmbrophilous + 0.12* typeSemideciduos

LRT (likelihood ratio test)

To test the overall model fit and hypothesis

LRT compares the full model with a reduced model where the explanatory variables of interest are omitted and provides p-values of the tests calculated using Chi-squared distribution.

```
Rec.bin.reduced<- glm(Rec.binar ~ 1, data=Lreg, family="binomial")</pre>
anova(Rec.bin.reduced, Recrut.binar, test="Chisq")
## Analysis of Deviance Table
##
## Model 1: Rec.binar ~ 1
## Model 2: Rec.binar ~ Mean diameter + Precipitation mean + type1
     Resid. Df Resid. Dev Df Deviance Pr(>Chi)
##
## 1
          449
                   586.92
                  553.52 4 33.4 9.893e-07 ***
## 2
           445
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
```

The LRT is 33.399 with a p-value 9.895e-07. Thus, we have strong evidence, based on high significance, that there is influence of some of the predictors in the success or failure of tree recruitment.

Perform tests on the individual regression parameters:

```
summary(Recrut.binar)
##
## Call:
```

```
## glm(formula = Rec.binar ~ Mean_diameter + Precipitation_mean +
       type1, family = "binomial", data = Lreg)
##
##
## Deviance Residuals:
                     Median
##
      Min
                10
                                  30
                                          Max
## -1.8080 -1.2327
                     0.7476
                              0.9216
                                       1.9004
##
## Coefficients:
##
                      Estimate Std. Error z value Pr(>|z|)
## (Intercept)
                                            2.543 0.01098 *
                      4.431746
                                 1.742508
## Mean diameter
                     -0.143722
                                 0.035671 -4.029
                                                   5.6e-05 ***
## Precipitation mean -0.001657
                                 0.001402 -1.182 0.23730
## type10mbrophilous -0.825271
                                 0.314016 -2.628 0.00859 **
## type1Semideciduos
                                 0.280880 -0.430 0.66737
                    -0.120710
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
##
## (Dispersion parameter for binomial family taken to be 1)
##
##
      Null deviance: 586.92
                             on 449
                                     degrees of freedom
## Residual deviance: 553.52 on 445
                                     degrees of freedom
## AIC: 563.52
##
## Number of Fisher Scoring iterations: 4
```

We can see that mean diameter (z = -4.029 and p=5.6e-05) appears to have a significant impact on the likelihood of recruitment success or failure of the trees. The same way the vegetation type Ombrophilous (z = -2.628 and p=0.00859) seems to have significant negative impact (Estimate = -0.825271) on the recruitment success. Semideciduous forest (z = -2.628 and p = 0.00859 **)does not seem to have a significant effect on recruitment, once mean diameter and ombrophilous are included in the model. The same can be said about the effect of mean precipitation (z =-1.505 and p = 0.13224) on recruitment, since it's effect is controlled by the stronger influence of mean diameter and ombrophilous type.

We can check for significance of influence from the predictors by executing a test for the full model.

```
anova(Recrut.binar, test="Chisq")

## Analysis of Deviance Table

##

## Model: binomial, link: logit

##

## Response: Rec.binar

##

## Terms added sequentially (first to last)

##

##

##

Df Deviance Resid. Df Resid. Dev Pr(>Chi)
```

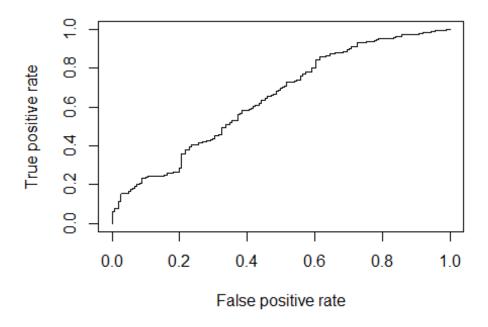
```
## NULL
                                        449
                                                586.92
## Mean diameter
                       1 23.8193
                                        448
                                                563.10 1.058e-06 ***
## Precipitation_mean 1
                           0.1662
                                        447
                                                562.93 0.683539
## type1
                           9.4142
                                        445
                                                553.52
                                                        0.009031 **
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
# To compute the odds of successful tree recruitment as a function of
mean diameter
# and ombrophilous type
exp(coef(Recrut.binar))
##
          (Intercept)
                           Mean_diameter Precipitation_mean
                               0.8661288
                                                  0.9983448
##
           84.0780806
##
   type10mbrophilous type1Semideciduos
##
            0.4381162
                               0.8862912
## To create a 95% confidence interval for the estimate, type:
exp(confint.default(Recrut.binar))
##
                                      97.5 %
                          2.5 %
## (Intercept)
                      2.7634844 2558.0472670
## Mean diameter
                      0.8076423
                                   0.9288507
## Precipitation mean 0.9956056
                                   1.0010915
## type10mbrophilous
                     0.2367547
                                   0.8107368
                                   1.5369570
## type1Semideciduos 0.5110827
```

We see that the odds ratio corresponding to mean diameter is 0.87 (95% CI: (0.80, 0.92)) and Ombrophilous is 0.43 (95% CI: (0.23, 0.811))

To use the fitted logistic regression curve to estimate the predictive power and accuracy of the model. The most commonly used way to check the predictive ability of a logistic model is to fit the ROC curve and its AUC (area under the curve), which are typical performance measurements for a binary classifier. The ROC is a curve which plots the true positive rate (TPR) against the false positive rate (FPR) at various threshold settings, whereas the AUC is the area under the ROC curve. A commonly used rule to assess the robustness of predictive power of the model, is to consider a good predictive ability when AUC is closer to 1 (1 is ideal) than to 0.5.

```
# install.packages("ROCR")
library(ROCR)

p <- predict(Recrut.binar, type="response") # predict scorees
pr <- prediction(p, Lreg$Rec.binar)
prf <- performance(pr, measure = "tpr", x.measure = "fpr")
plot(prf)</pre>
```

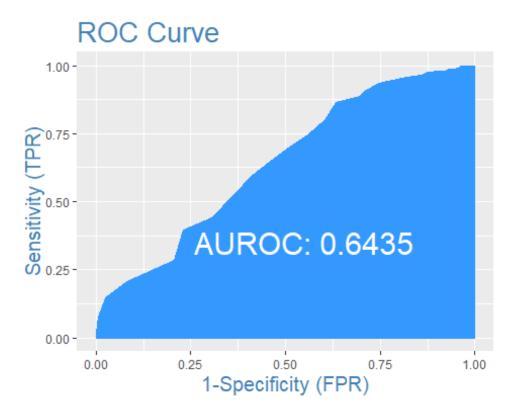


```
auc <- performance(pr, measure = "auc")
auc <- auc@y.values[[1]]
auc
## [1] 0.6462206</pre>
```

Or we can use the package plotROC for a better presentation of the AUC and true and false positive rates.

install.packages("InformationValue") # To plot ROC curve

```
library(InformationValue)
P<- plotROC(Lreg$Rec.binar, p)</pre>
```



Here we got a reasonable predictive accuracy (0.64), but it could be better (e.g. > 0.70).

Moran's I: spatial autocorrelation test

Spatial autocorrelation refers to the correlation between the values of a variable due their proximity in geographical space. This violates the assumption that they are from independent observations.

The function "moransI" of the package "lctools" allows us to estimate the local spatial correlation of the residuals from a linear model.

In order to execute the classical Moran's I test with this function, we first must calculate and provide metric coordinates, such as UTM coordinates, for each row of data. Firstly you must convert the geographical coordinates belonging to your data to UTM. After this, if you are using subplots (e.g. treatment with 50 subplots of 10 meters per 10 meters) you must add the distance of each subplot from the reference point of the site to the UTM coordinates of the site. This is done separately for X direction (East-West) and Y direction (North-South). If the reference point is the South-West corner of the site, you add the distances of the subplot in W-E and S-N direction to the site coordinates (e.g. 10 m and 30 m). But, if the reference point is the North-East corner, you subtract the distances from the site coordinates.

Each row of your data will contain real coordinates based on the sample units (here represented by subplot) and you will be able to estimate spatial autocorrelation in your linear model.

It is also important to note that Moran's I ranges from -1 to 1. Values close to -1 imply negative spatial autocorrelation (low values tend to have neighbours with high values and vice versa) and values close to 1 represent positive spatial autocorrelation (spatial clusters of similarly low or high values among neighbour subplots, as in the present example).

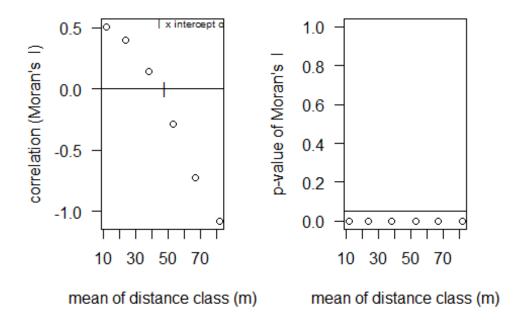
The function "moransI" provides the Moran's I value (named as "Morans.I") and the two tailed p-value (named "p.value.resampling" in the output) to test the significance of Moran's I and, consequently, significance of spatial autocorrelation.

In order to graphically demonstrate the results for Moran's I, you can create a correlogram with the function "correlog" of the package "ncf" as shown in the example below. There, a univariate spatial correlogram based on the spatial distances between the subplots is provided. Additionally, a plot with the corresponding p-values of the Moran's I statistic is drawn, including a line of the threshold (p=0.05) to facilitate assessment of significance.

```
# install.packages("lctools")
# install.packages("ncf")
library(lctools) # Moran's I
library(ncf) # correlogram
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG, 4)
##
             type Plot Site
                                            Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea triplinervia
                                                           8
                                                                 27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                                 Amaioua intermedia
                                                           10
                                                                 39.15
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                      Aniba_firmula
                                                           10
                                                                 33.93
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                      Annona cacans
                                                                 40.43
                                                           10
##
     Mean diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation mean
Temperature mean
## 1
                                      7
             6.357
                        0.058
                                                       1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                        0.120
                                     12
                                                       1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                        0.090
                                     10
                                                       1250
24.4
## 4
                                     19
                                                       1250
             6.626
                        0.128
24.4
    Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x
                                                     utm.y local.utm.x
##
## 1
          6.94
                     14.34
                                 0
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                                747923
## 2
          2.74
                      6.94
                               -10
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                747913
## 3
          1.71
                      2.35
                               -20
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                                747903
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                                747893
## 4
          1.60
                      2.47
                               -30
```

```
##
     local.utm.y
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
LM to base the Moran's I computation:
Mean.Diameter.pre <- lm(Mean_diameter ~ Mortality + Recruitment +
                                                Site, data=BIOVEG)
Moran's I
Moran.M.diameter <- moransI(Coords=cbind(BIOVEG$local.utm.x,</pre>
BIOVEG$local.utm.y),
                   Bandwidth=4, resid(Mean.Diameter.pre), WType="Binary")
Moran.M.diameter$Morans.I
##
           1
## 0.6320286
Moran.M.diameter$p.value.resampling # significance of the Moran's I
##
## 9.537331e-37
Moran.M.diameter$p.value.randomization # another variant of p-value
##
## 1.065647e-36
Graph (Correlogram):
Cor.Mean diameter <- correlog(x=BIOVEG$local.utm.x, y=BIOVEG$local.utm.y,
                       as.vector(resid(Mean.Diameter.pre)), increment=15,
resamp=1000)
## 100 of 1000
200 of 1000
300 of 1000
400 of 1000
500 of 1000
600 of 1000
700 of 1000
800 of 1000
900
    of 1000
1000 of 1000
x11(width=12, height=12) ####
par(mfrow=c(1,2))
plot(Cor.Mean_diameter$mean.of.class[1:6],
Cor.Mean_diameter$correlation[1:6],
```

```
xlab="mean of distance class (m)", ylab="correlation (Moran's I)",
las=1)
abline(0, 0)
points(Cor.Mean_diameter$x.intercept, 0, pch="|")
legend("topright", "x intercept of autocorrelation", pch="|", bty="n",
cex=0.6)
plot(Cor.Mean_diameter$mean.of.class[1:6], Cor.Mean_diameter$p[1:6],
ylim=c(0,1),
    xlab="mean of distance class (m)", ylab="p-value of Moran's I", las=1)
abline(0.05, 0)
```



dev.off() # turn off the graphics device

LME (Linear Mixed Effects)

With spatial autocorrelation's correction included

A LME model is a mixed model is implemented to deal with pseudoreplicates by including random effects of, e.g., sites that meet the assumption of normal distribution of residuals. In addition to random effects, it can handle spatial autocorrelation. Therefore, if in a previous test (e.g. Moran's I) you find significant spatial autocorrelation in a Linear Mixed Model (LMM; with random and fixed effects and normal distribution), you must use LME with a spatial correlation strucure in the model. If you have non-normal data with spatial auto-correlation please check the

function glmmPQL of the package MASS to calculate a GLMM with a spatial correlation structure.

There are different variants of spatial correlation structures. One good example is Exponential correlation (function "corExp"). The correlation structure must be included in the syntax of the lme command as in the analyses below. If you don't include a correlation function (e.g. corExp) in the LME model, it is just like a common LMM. However, like GLMM, this would not be enough to resolve the autocorrelation and provide reliable p-values. In order to test spatial autocorrelation by Moran's I, you must first construct a LM with the same predictors that will be used in the LME (see LM model used in the section Linearity Tests and Moran's I). To better understand this approach of handling spatial autocorrelation using the proper regression models, read Dormann et al. (2007).

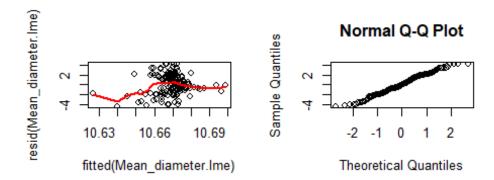
Dormann, C.F., M. McPherson, J., B. Araújo, M., Bivand, R., Bolliger, J., Carl, G.et al. (2007). Methods to account for spatial autocorrelation in the analysis of species distributional data: A review. Ecography (Cop.)., 30, 609–628

Note 1: LMM can be calculated using either Maximum Likelihood (ML) or Restricted Maximum Likelihood (REML). If we are focusing on estimation and testing of fixed effects, we choose "ML". In addition to correlation of the residuals, lme can also deal with heterogeneous variance of residuals (heteroscedasticity), e.g. when variances differ among groups, such as sites. For this purpose, we can use the "weights" argument.

```
# install.packages("nlme")
# install.packages("car")
library(nlme) # LME models
library(car) # Anova type II gives the predictors the same chance of
             # being significant
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG,4)
##
             type Plot Site
                                             Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea triplinervia
                                                           8
                                                                 27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                                 Amaioua intermedia
                                                           10
                                                                 39.15
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                      Aniba_firmula
                                                                 33.93
                                                           10
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                      Annona cacans
                                                           10
                                                                 40.43
     Mean_diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation_mean
##
Temperature_mean
## 1
                                      7
             6.357
                        0.058
                                                       1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                        0.120
                                      12
                                                       1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                        0.090
                                      10
                                                       1250
24.4
## 4
             6.626
                                      19
                        0.128
                                                       1250
24.4
```

```
Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x utm.y local.utm.x
##
## 1
          6.94
                     14.34
                                 0
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                747923
                      6.94
## 2
          2.74
                               -10
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                747913
## 3
          1.71
                      2.35
                                -20
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                747903
## 4
                               -30
                                         0 747923 7807727
          1.60
                      2.47
                                                                747893
##
     local.utm.y
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
Mean_diameter.lme<- lme(Mean_diameter ~ Mortality + Recruitment,
data=BIOVEG,
              method="ML", random= ~1 Site,
corr=corExp(form=~local.utm.x+
              local.utm.y Site), weights=varIdent(form=~1 Site),
na.action=na.omit)
summary(Mean_diameter.lme)
## Linear mixed-effects model fit by maximum likelihood
##
    Data: BIOVEG
##
         AIC
                  BIC
                        logLik
     97.1106 121.1957 -40.5553
##
##
## Random effects:
    Formula: ~1 | Site
##
##
            (Intercept) Residual
## StdDev: 0.0001718405 2.831905
##
## Correlation Structure: Exponential spatial correlation
## Formula: ~local.utm.x + local.utm.y | Site
## Parameter estimate(s):
##
      range
## 999.8204
## Variance function:
## Structure: Different standard deviations per stratum
## Formula: ~1 | Site
## Parameter estimates:
##
       AREA1
                 AREA2
                           AREA3
## 1.0000000 0.3103472 2.6947936
## Fixed effects: Mean diameter ~ Mortality + Recruitment
##
                   Value Std.Error DF
                                          t-value p-value
## (Intercept) 10.672167 0.8185581 145 13.037763 0.0000
                0.001605 0.0032656 145 0.491505 0.6238
## Mortality
## Recruitment -0.003023 0.0091995 145 -0.328623 0.7429
## Correlation:
##
               (Intr) Mrtlty
## Mortality
               -0.006
## Recruitment -0.032 -0.053
```

```
##
## Standardized Within-Group Residuals:
                        Q1
                                                 Q3
                                                            Max
## -1.51239300 -0.68377730 -0.01067181 0.29650175 1.46812947
##
## Number of Observations: 150
## Number of Groups: 3
## Anova from car package
An<- Anova(Mean_diameter.lme, Type = II)
An
## Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)
##
## Response: Mean_diameter
##
                Chisq Df Pr(>Chisq)
## Mortality
               0.2465 1
                             0.6195
## Recruitment 0.1102 1
                             0.7399
## Residuals
x11(width=12, height=12) ####
par(mfrow=c(2,2))
plot(fitted(Mean_diameter.lme), resid(Mean_diameter.lme))
lines(smooth.spline(fitted(Mean_diameter.lme), resid(Mean_diameter.lme),
                                          spar=c(1)), col="red", lwd=2)
qqnorm(resid(Mean diameter.lme))
qqline(resid(Mean diameter.lme))
hist(resid(Mean_diameter.lme))
#dev.off() ## turn off the graphics device
```

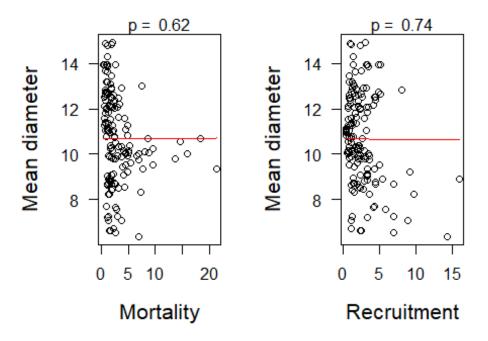


istogram of resid(Mean_diamete



resid(Mean_diameter.lme)

```
## Scatterplot
b.0.Mean_diameter<- Mean_diameter.lme$coefficients$fixed[1]</pre>
b.1.Mean_diameter<- Mean_diameter.lme$coefficients$fixed[2]</pre>
b.2.Mean diameter<- Mean diameter.lme$coefficients$fixed[3]</pre>
x11(width=14, height=8)
par(mfrow=c(1,2))
plot(BIOVEG$Mean_diameter ~ BIOVEG$Mortality, las=1, ylab="Mean
diameter", xlab="Mortality",
     cex.lab=1.3)
curve(b.0.Mean_diameter + b.1.Mean_diameter*x, add=TRUE, col="red")
mtext(ifelse(An[1,3]<0.001, "p < 0.001", paste("p = ",</pre>
round(An[1,3],3))))
plot(BIOVEG$Mean_diameter ~ BIOVEG$Recruitment, las=1, ylab="Mean
diameter", xlab="Recruitment",
     cex.lab=1.3)
curve(b.0.Mean_diameter + b.2.Mean_diameter*x, add=TRUE, col="red")
mtext(ifelse(An[2,3]<0.001, "p < 0.001", paste("p = ",
round(An[2,3],3))))
```



#dev.off() ## turn off the graphics device

GLS (Generalized Least Squares)

GLS is another variant of linear regression. It is mostly used to perform analysis when there is significant spatial (or temporal) correlation between the residuals (or if there is heteroscedasticity), but you do not have any random effect in the model. In the absence of random effects, you cannot use lme, but you can use gls. GLS models fit correlation structures of the variance-covariance matrix to model the (spatial) dependence of observations, just as LME models do. Thus, gls is an efficient tool to deal with spatial autocorrelation when you would otherwise use lm (read Dormann et al. 2007).

Dormann et al. Methods to account for spatial autocorrelation in the analysis of species distributional data: a review. Ecography 30: 609-628, 2007.

N.B. GLS assumes a normal distribution.

In cases such as in the example below, when you just want to know whether there is variation of a variable among treatments and study sites, for instance, but your data comes from pseudoreplicates (e.g. subplots in our example below), GLS is a good option. Notice that in this case, you use site as a fixed effect. Otherwise, if you want to include site as a random effect, you must use a mixed effect model (GLMM or LME). Before calculating a GLS model, you should use Moran's I to check the significance of

spatial autocorrelation. If significant autocorrelation is found, you must include a correlation structure in the model (e.g. correlation=corExp).

```
## Pre-test: Spatial autocorrelation (Moran'I)
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG,4)
                                             Species Richness Diameter
##
             type Plot Site
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea_triplinervia
                                                            8
                                                                  27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                                  Amaioua intermedia
                                                           10
                                                                  39.15
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                       Aniba firmula
                                                                  33.93
                                                           10
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                       Annona cacans
                                                                  40.43
                                                           10
     Mean_diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation_mean
##
Temperature mean
## 1
                        0.058
             6.357
                                                       1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                        0.120
                                      12
                                                       1250
24.4
## 3
                        0.090
                                      10
             6.632
                                                       1250
24.4
## 4
             6.626
                        0.128
                                      19
                                                       1250
24.4
     Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x
##
                                                     utm.y local.utm.x
## 1
          6.94
                     14.34
                                  0
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                747923
## 2
          2.74
                      6.94
                                -10
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                 747913
                                -20
                                          0 747923 7807727
## 3
          1.71
                      2.35
                                                                747903
                                          0 747923 7807727
## 4
          1.60
                      2.47
                                -30
                                                                747893
     local.utm.y
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
## LM
Mean.Diameter.pre <- lm(Mean diameter ~ Site, data=BIOVEG)
summary(Mean.Diameter.pre)
##
## Call:
## lm(formula = Mean_diameter ~ Site, data = BIOVEG)
##
## Residuals:
##
        Min
                  10
                       Median
                                     3Q
                                             Max
## -2.14642 -0.57963 -0.01675 0.58659
##
## Coefficients:
               Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
##
## (Intercept)
                 8.5034
                            0.1168
                                      72.81
                                              <2e-16 ***
## SiteAREA2
                 2.1837
                            0.1652
                                      13.22
                                              <2e-16 ***
```

```
## SiteAREA3
                    4.4821
                                 0.1652
                                           27.14
                                                    <2e-16 ***
## ---
                      0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
## Signif. codes:
## Residual standard error: 0.8258 on 147 degrees of freedom
## Multiple R-squared: 0.8336, Adjusted R-squared: 0.8314
## F-statistic: 368.3 on 2 and 147 DF, p-value: < 2.2e-16
shapiro.test(BIOVEG$Mean_diameter)
##
##
    Shapiro-Wilk normality test
##
## data: BIOVEG$Mean diameter
## W = 0.98496, p-value = 0.1022
# Residuals
x11(width=12, height=12)
par(mfrow=c(2,2))
plot(Mean.Diameter.pre)
                                    Standardized residuals
                                                 Normal Q-Q
          Residuals vs Fitted
Residuals
            9
                10
                    11
                        12
                            13
                                               -2
                                                   -1
                                                       0
                                                              2
              Fitted values
                                              Theoretical Quantiles
गीStandardized residuals
                                    Standardized residuals
                                             Constant Leverage:
                                          Residuals vs Factor Levels
            Scale-Location
                                         ო
                                         0
     0.0
                                         က္
            9
                10
                   11
                        12
                            13
                                              AREA1
                                                           AREA3
```

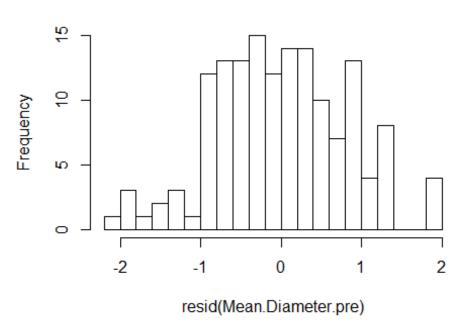
```
dev.off() ## turn off the graphics device
## png
## 2
```

Fitted values

Factor Level Combinations

```
x11(width=12, height=12)
hist(resid(Mean.Diameter.pre), breaks=20)
```

Histogram of resid(Mean.Diameter.pre)



GLS model

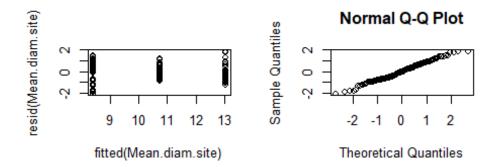
Since we found significant spatial autocorrelation in the pre-test with Moran's I, a correlation (corExp) structure must be added in the syntax of the model

```
library(nlme)
library(car)
Mean.diam.site<- gls(Mean_diameter ~ Site,
correlation=corExp(form=~1 | Site),
                     data=BIOVEG)
summary(Mean.diam.site)
## Generalized least squares fit by REML
##
     Model: Mean diameter ~ Site
##
     Data: BIOVEG
##
          AIC
                   BIC
                          logLik
     204.1488 219.1009 -97.07439
##
##
## Correlation Structure: Exponential spatial correlation
## Formula: ~1 | Site
## Parameter estimate(s):
##
      range
## 10.55233
##
## Coefficients:
                  Value Std.Error t-value p-value
##
## (Intercept) 8.391105 0.6110569 13.732118 0.0000
## SiteAREA2 2.361087 0.8641649 2.732218 0.0071
## SiteAREA3 4.646891 0.8641649 5.377319 0.0000
##
## Correlation:
             (Intr) SAREA2
## SiteAREA2 -0.707
## SiteAREA3 -0.707 0.500
##
## Standardized residuals:
##
           Min
                        Q1
                                   Med
                                                 Q3
## -1.82692630 -0.57058862 -0.03421433 0.53862327 1.69929827
##
## Residual standard error: 1.113403
## Degrees of freedom: 150 total; 147 residual
An<- Anova(Mean.diam.site)</pre>
An
## Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)
##
```

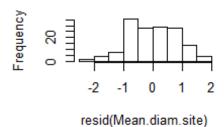
```
## Response: Mean_diameter
## Df Chisq Pr(>Chisq)
## Site 2 28.918 5.254e-07 ***
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1

# Residuals

x11(width=12, height=12)
par(mfrow=c(2,2))
plot(fitted(Mean.diam.site), resid(Mean.diam.site))
qqnorm(resid(Mean.diam.site))
hist(resid(Mean.diam.site))
# dev.off()
```

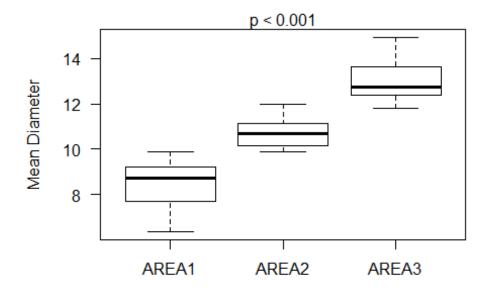


Histogram of resid(Mean.diam.s



```
# Boxplot

x11(width=12, height=12)
par(mfrow=c(1,1))
boxplot(BIOVEG$Mean_diameter ~ BIOVEG$Site, las=1, ylab="Mean Diameter")
mtext(ifelse(An[1,3]<0.001, "p < 0.001", paste("p = ",
round(An[1,3],3))))</pre>
```



dev.off()

QUADRATIC MODEL

A quadratic regression is an extension of simple linear regression aiming to find the best fit equation a set of data (dependent and predictor variables) shaped like a parabola (e.g. U-shape curve). A quadratic fit is useful When the coefficients and, consequently, the curve appear to fit the data better than the linear model does.

Create linear model of species richness vs. Hogweed cover

```
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")</pre>
head(Hogweed,4)
     Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
Species.richness
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
## 1
       s1
                                                 0.5
                                                            70
18
## 2
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.7
       s2
                                                            65
19
## 3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.4
                                                             30
       s3
16
## 4
       s4
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.9
                                                            90
23
     Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
##
Inclination
```

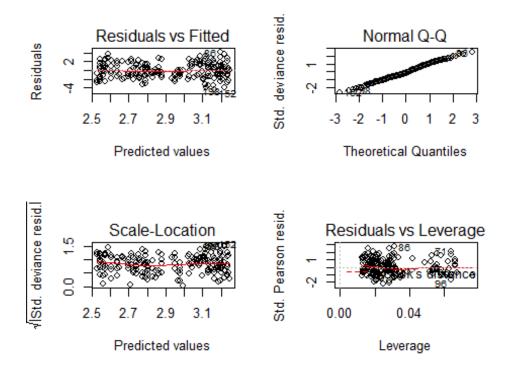
```
## 1
                                      NONE
                0.9
                               80
                                             TREESHRUB
                                                         295.653
2
                                                         295.653
## 2
                1.4
                               65
                                      NONE
                                             TREESHRUB
2
                                                         295.653
## 3
                                      NONE
                1.7
                               90
                                             TREESHRUB
2
## 4
                                      NONE
                1.0
                               20
                                                  NONE
                                                         292.112
2
##
     Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
                            3.99
                                     22.27
## 1
              W
                  0.19
## 2
                  0.19
                            3.56
                                     12.49
              W
## 3
              W
                  0.19
                            8.44
                                     39.95
                                     12.34
                            2.53
## 4
              W
                  0.12
M.lin <- glm(Species.richness ~ Hogweed.cover + Habitat.type,
data=Hogweed,
             family="quasipoisson")
summary(M.lin)
##
## Call:
## glm(formula = Species.richness ~ Hogweed.cover + Habitat.type,
       family = "quasipoisson", data = Hogweed)
##
##
## Deviance Residuals:
       Min
                      Median
##
                 10
                                   3Q
                                           Max
## -4.3435
            -1.2231 -0.2592
                               1.2230
                                        4.0514
##
## Coefficients:
                              Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
##
## (Intercept)
                                         0.059719 54.392 < 2e-16 ***
                              3.248210
## Hogweed.cover
                             -0.003072
                                         0.001094 -2.807 0.00551 **
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass -0.022699
                                         0.080921
                                                   -0.281 0.77938
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
                                         0.083712
                                                   -5.116 7.43e-07 ***
                             -0.428306
## Habitat.typewasteland
                             -0.101591
                                         0.106856
                                                   -0.951 0.34292
                                         0.111048 -3.196 0.00163 **
## Habitat.typewoodland
                             -0.354923
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
##
## (Dispersion parameter for quasipoisson family taken to be 2.884375)
##
       Null deviance: 775.16 on 200 degrees of freedom
##
## Residual deviance: 571.60 on 195 degrees of freedom
## AIC: NA
##
## Number of Fisher Scoring iterations: 4
anova(M.lin, test = "F")
## Analysis of Deviance Table
##
```

```
## Model: quasipoisson, link: log
##
## Response: Species.richness
## Terms added sequentially (first to last)
##
##
                 Df Deviance Resid. Df Resid. Dev
##
                                                            Pr(>F)
## NULL
                                   200
                                           775.16
                      70.215
## Hogweed.cover
                  1
                                   199
                                           704.94 24.343 1.723e-06 ***
## Habitat.type
                  4
                     133.345
                                   195
                                           571.60 11.557 1.929e-08 ***
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
```

Hogweed cover has a significant negative linear effect on species richness

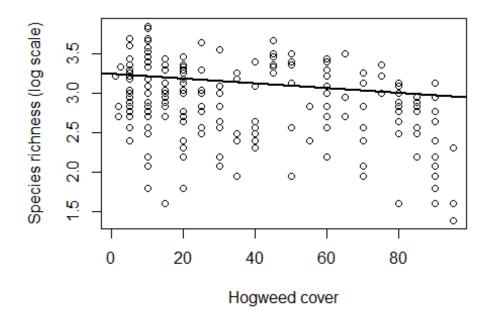
```
# Model diangostics

par(mfrow = c(2, 2))
plot(M.lin)
```



The diagnostic graphs look ok.

```
# Plot the data and the regression line
par(mfrow = c(1, 1))
plot(log(Species.richness) ~ Hogweed.cover, data = Hogweed,
```



The plot suggests that a quadartic model might fit the data even better

```
# Create variable of centered and squared Hogweed cover

Mean.cover <- mean(Hogweed$Hogweed.cover)
Hogweed.cover.sq <- (Hogweed$Hogweed.cover - Mean.cover)^2</pre>
```

Calculate the model with original and, additionally, squared Hogweed cover

```
M.quad <- glm(Species.richness ~ Hogweed.cover + Hogweed.cover.sq +</pre>
Habitat.type,
              data=Hogweed, family="quasipoisson")
summary(M.quad)
##
## Call:
## glm(formula = Species.richness ~ Hogweed.cover + Hogweed.cover.sq +
       Habitat.type, family = "quasipoisson", data = Hogweed)
##
##
## Deviance Residuals:
                 10
                      Median
##
       Min
                                    3Q
                                            Max
## -4.3890 -1.3328 -0.2187
                                1.0562
                                         4.2712
##
## Coefficients:
```

```
##
                              Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
## (Intercept)
                             3.286e+00 6.258e-02 52.502 < 2e-16 ***
## Hogweed.cover
                             -1.718e-03 1.303e-03 -1.319 0.188639
## Hogweed.cover.sq
                             -8.413e-05 4.408e-05 -1.908 0.057825
## Habitat.typeruderal.grass -5.146e-02 8.144e-02 -0.632 0.528221
## Habitat.typetall.herbs
                             -4.418e-01 8.299e-02 -5.324 2.79e-07 ***
                            -1.010e-01 1.060e-01 -0.952 0.342054
## Habitat.typewasteland
                            -3.748e-01 1.107e-01 -3.387 0.000855 ***
## Habitat.typewoodland
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
##
## (Dispersion parameter for quasipoisson family taken to be 2.838361)
##
##
       Null deviance: 775.16 on 200 degrees of freedom
## Residual deviance: 561.23 on 194 degrees of freedom
## AIC: NA
##
## Number of Fisher Scoring iterations: 4
anova(M.quad, test="F")
## Analysis of Deviance Table
##
## Model: quasipoisson, link: log
##
## Response: Species.richness
##
## Terms added sequentially (first to last)
##
##
##
                   Df Deviance Resid. Df Resid. Dev
                                                          F
                                                               Pr(>F)
## NULL
                                     200
                                             775.16
                        70.215
                                     199
                                             704.94 24.7377 1.442e-06
## Hogweed.cover
                    1
***
## Hogweed.cover.sq 1
                        10.471
                                     198
                                             694.47 3.6891
                                                              0.05623 .
                    4 133.242
## Habitat.type
                                     194
                                             561.23 11.7358 1.479e-08
***
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
```

Compare linear and quadratic model

```
anova(M.lin, M.quad, test = "F")

## Analysis of Deviance Table

##

## Model 1: Species.richness ~ Hogweed.cover + Habitat.type

## Model 2: Species.richness ~ Hogweed.cover + Hogweed.cover.sq +

Habitat.type

## Resid. Df Resid. Dev Df Deviance F Pr(>F)

## 1 195 571.60
```

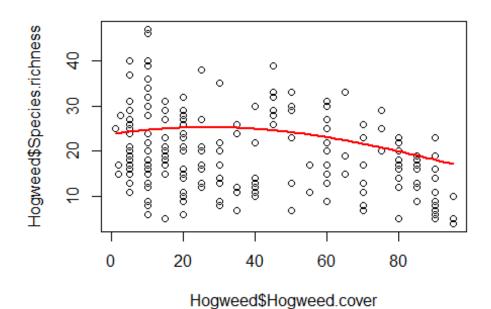
```
## 2 194 561.23 1 10.368 3.6527 0.05745 .
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
```

Squared hogweed cover is (marginally) not significant.

Anyway, let's create a scatter plot with regression curve.

```
plot(Hogweed$Species.richness ~ Hogweed$Hogweed.cover)

b0 <- coef(M.quad)[1] # Intercept
b1 <- coef(M.quad)[2] # Hogweed cover linear
b2 <- coef(M.quad)[3] # Hogwee cover squared
# In the curve syntax, we need to center and square "x" before
multiplying it with
# the coefficient of Hogweed.cover.sq.
curve(exp(b0 + b1*x + b2*(x-Mean.cover)^2), add=T, col="red", lwd=2)</pre>
```



GNM (Generalized Nonlinear Models)

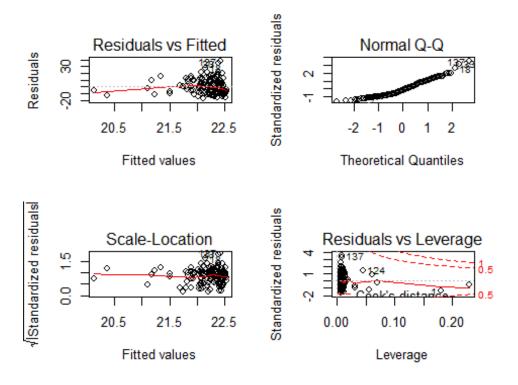
If you find significant non-linear relationships among variables, you can first try transforming (e.g. log, square) the predictor variable. This will not always be enough to resolve non-linearity issues and it can turn p-values of the linearity tests non-significant. If non-linearity is not resolved using this procedure, models such as LM, GLM and GLS are not the appropriate model for this purpose. Indeed, a better way to

deal with non-linearity may be to apply a model that uses a nonlinear function of the predictor variables, i.e. on the right-hand side of the model formula. GNM models still require you to specify the distribution family of the dependent variable (e.g. Gaussian, Poisson, Quasi-poisson). Furthermore, it is possible to use an option to coerce a GLM model to a GNM model, as explained at the end of this section.

If the relationship between some of the predictor and the dependent variables is nonlinear, is necessary to use a proper model that accounts for the nonlinear effects.

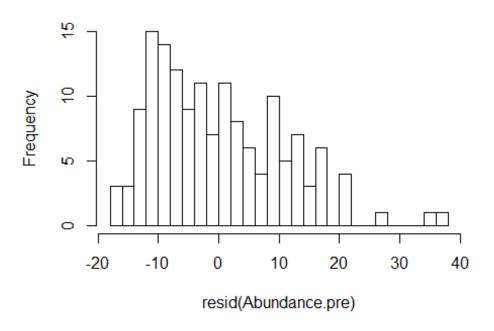
```
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG,4)
##
             type Plot Site
                                             Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea_triplinervia
                                                                  27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                                  Amaioua intermedia
                                                           10
                                                                  39.15
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                       Aniba firmula
                                                           10
                                                                  33.93
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                       Annona cacans
                                                           10
                                                                  40.43
     Mean_diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation_mean
Temperature mean
## 1
             6.357
                        0.058
                                       7
                                                       1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                        0.120
                                      12
                                                       1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                        0.090
                                      10
                                                       1250
24.4
## 4
             6.626
                        0.128
                                      19
                                                       1250
24.4
##
     Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x
                                                     utm.y local.utm.x
## 1
          6.94
                     14.34
                                  0
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                 747923
## 2
          2.74
                      6.94
                                -10
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                 747913
## 3
          1.71
                      2.35
                                -20
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                 747903
                                          0 747923 7807727
                      2.47
                                -30
                                                                 747893
## 4
          1.60
##
     local.utm.y
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
## Base LM model to apply linearity test
Abundance.pre <- lm(Abundance ∼ Recruitment, data=BIOVEG)
summary(Abundance.pre)
##
## Call:
## lm(formula = Abundance ~ Recruitment, data = BIOVEG)
## Residuals:
##
       Min
                10 Median
                                 3Q
                                        Max
           -9.205 -2.062
                              8.069
## -17.110
                                     37.590
##
```

```
## Coefficients:
##
               Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
                                             <2e-16 ***
                            1.3076
                                    17.262
## (Intercept) 22.5720
                            0.3819
## Recruitment -0.1530
                                    -0.401
                                              0.689
                   0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
## Signif. codes:
##
## Residual standard error: 10.85 on 148 degrees of freedom
## Multiple R-squared: 0.001083,
                                    Adjusted R-squared:
## F-statistic: 0.1604 on 1 and 148 DF, p-value: 0.6894
## Residuals
x11(width=12, height=12)
par(mfrow=c(2,2))
plot(Abundance.pre)
```

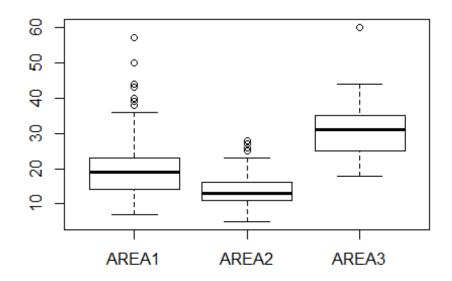


dev.off() ## turn off the graphics device
hist(resid(Abundance.pre), breaks=20)

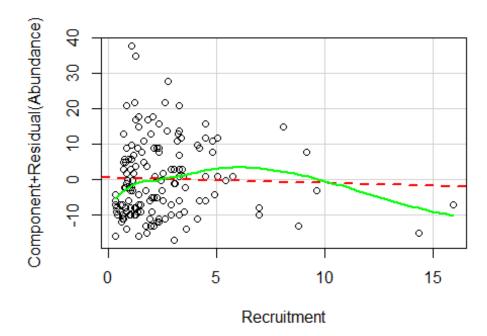
Histogram of resid(Abundance.pre)



dev.off() ## turn off the graphics device
plot(BIOVEG\$Site, BIOVEG\$Abundance) # variation among sites



```
### Tests of linearity
library(car)
crPlots(Abundance.pre, col.lines=c("red", "green"))
```

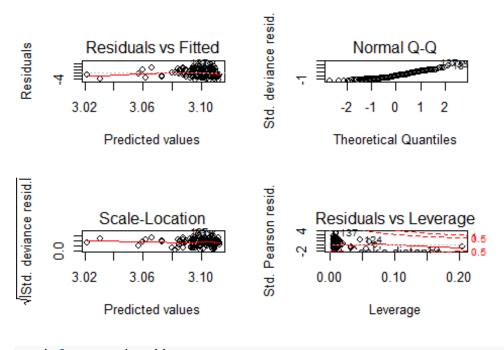


If one find some nonlinear relationship between predictor and dependent variable using the diagnostic for linearity showed previously here, thus a model that account for nonlinear terms is necessary to carry the statistical prediction.

```
N.gnm<- gnm(Abundance ~ Exp(Recruitment), data=BIOVEG, method = "gnmFit",</pre>
start = NULL, checkLinear = TRUE, verbose = FALSE, family="quasipoisson")
summary(N.gnm)
##
## Call:
##
## gnm(formula = Abundance ~ Exp(Recruitment), family = "quasipoisson",
       data = BIOVEG, method = "gnmFit", checkLinear = TRUE, start =
##
NULL,
##
       verbose = FALSE)
##
## Deviance Residuals:
                      Median
##
       Min
                 10
                                    30
                                            Max
## -4.4003 -2.1178 -0.4718
                                1.6239
                                         6.5653
##
## Coefficients:
##
                       Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
                                  0.060506 34.949
                                                      <2e-16 ***
## (Intercept)
                       2.114609
## Exp(.).Recruitment -0.006124
                                  0.018796 -0.326
                                                       0.745
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
##
## (Dispersion parameter for quasipoisson family taken to be 5.297747)
## Residual deviance: 758.18 on 148 degrees of freedom
## AIC: NA
##
## Number of iterations: 10
An <- anova(N.gnm, test = "F")
An
## Analysis of Deviance Table
##
## Model: quasipoisson, link: log
##
## Response: Abundance
##
## Terms added sequentially (first to last)
##
##
##
                    Df Deviance Resid. Df Resid. Dev
                                                           F Pr(>F)
## NULL
                                       149
                                               758.90
## Exp(Recruitment) 1 0.72765
                                       148
                                               758.18 0.1374 0.7115
## Residuals
x11(width=12, height=12)
par(mfrow = c(2,2), oma = c(0, 0, 3, 0))
```

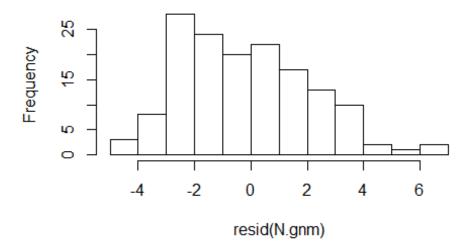
```
title <- paste(deparse(N.gnm$formula, width.cutoff = 50), collapse =
"\n")
plot(N.gnm, sub.caption = title)</pre>
```

Abundance ~ Exp(Recruitment)



```
par(mfrow = c(1,1))
hist(resid(N.gnm))
```

Histogram of resid(N.gnm)

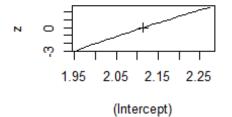


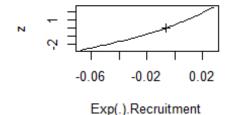
```
## Deviance profile (optional) - just similar to a summary
prof<- profile(N.gnm, which = ofInterest(N.gnm), alpha = 0.05, trace =</pre>
TRUE)
##
## Parameter: (Intercept) down
##
## Parameter: (Intercept) up
##
## Parameter: Exp(.).Recruitment down
## Parameter: Exp(.).Recruitment up
prof
## $`(Intercept)`
              z par.vals.(Intercept) par.vals.Exp(.).Recruitment
## 1 -2.8403065
                          1.956489871
                                                       0.020592763
## 2 -2.1157986
                          1.996019742
                                                       0.015066410
## 3 -1.3995734
                          2.035549613
                                                       0.008855133
## 4 -0.6935905
                          2.075079484
                                                       0.001838984
## 5
      0.0000000
                          2.114609355
                                                      -0.006123605
## 6
      0.6788685
                          2.154139226
                                                      -0.015198816
## 7
      1.3405281
                          2.193669097
                                                      -0.025580770
## 8
      1.9823610
                          2.233198968
                                                      -0.037495562
## 9
      2.6016481
                          2.272728839
                                                      -0.051206839
```

```
##
## $`Exp(.).Recruitment`
               z par.vals.(Intercept) par.vals.Exp(.).Recruitment
##
## 1
      -2.6375990
                           2.241123018
                                                       -0.067522297
## 2
     -2.2261319
                           2.218699511
                                                       -0.055242559
## 3
      -1.7670464
                           2.195032442
                                                       -0.042962820
## 4
                           2.169952893
     -1.2514221
                                                       -0.030683082
## 5
     -0.6676060
                           2.143242561
                                                       -0.018403343
## 6
       0.0000000
                           2.114609355
                                                       -0.006123605
## 7
       0.2912927
                           2.102683614
                                                       -0.001272529
## 8
       0.6005749
                           2.090364248
                                                        0.003578546
## 9
       0.9297606
                           2.077613865
                                                        0.008429621
## 10
      1.2810713
                           2.064388272
                                                        0.013280696
      1.6571012
## 11
                           2.050634724
                                                        0.018131772
## 12
       2.0608991
                           2.036289619
                                                        0.022982847
## 13 2.4960714
                                                        0.027833922
                           2.021275411
##
## attr(,"original.fit")
##
## Call:
##
   gnm(formula = Abundance ~ Exp(Recruitment), family = "quasipoisson",
       data = BIOVEG, method = "gnmFit", checkLinear = TRUE, start =
##
NULL,
##
       verbose = FALSE)
##
## Coefficients:
          (Intercept) Exp(.).Recruitment
##
##
          2.114609355
                              -0.006123605
##
## Deviance:
                         758.1769
## Pearson chi-squared: 784.0666
## Residual df:
                         148
## attr(,"summary")
##
## Call:
##
## gnm(formula = Abundance ~ Exp(Recruitment), family = "quasipoisson",
       data = BIOVEG, method = "gnmFit", checkLinear = TRUE, start =
##
NULL,
##
       verbose = FALSE)
##
## Deviance Residuals:
##
          Min
                        1Q
                                Median
                                                 30
                                                            Max
## -4.4003229
               -2.1178163
                           -0.4718448
                                         1.6238609
                                                      6.5653146
##
## Coefficients:
                                      Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
##
                           Estimate
                        2.114609355 0.060506016 34.94875
                                                            < 2e-16 ***
## (Intercept)
## Exp(.).Recruitment -0.006123605 0.018795864 -0.32580 0.74504
```

```
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
##
## (Dispersion parameter for quasipoisson family taken to be 5.297747)
##
## Residual deviance: 758.17689 on 148 degrees of freedom
## AIC: NA
##
## Number of iterations: 10
##
## attr(,"class")
## [1] "profile.gnm" "profile.glm" "profile"

x11(width=12, height=8)
plot(prof)
```

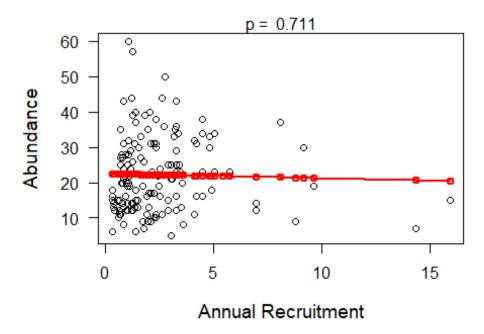




```
# dev.off()
## scatterplot

x11(width=12, height=12)
plot(BIOVEG$Abundance ~ BIOVEG$Recruitment, ylab="Abundance",
xlab= "Annual Recruitment", las = 1, cex.lab=1.2)
points(BIOVEG$Recruitment, fitted(N.gnm), col = "red", lwd = 2)
Smooth <- smooth.spline(BIOVEG$Recruitment, fitted(N.gnm))
lines(Smooth, col = "red", lwd = 2)</pre>
```

```
mtext(ifelse(An[2,6]<0.001, "p < 0.001", paste("p = ",
round(An[2,6],3))))</pre>
```



dev.off()

Note 1: If you need to coerce objects of class "glm" to an object of class "gnm" follow the procedure below.

```
Nall.glm<- glm(Abundance ~ Recruitment, data=BIOVEG,
family="quasipoisson")
N.gnm2<- update(asGnm(Nall.glm))</pre>
N.gnm2
##
## Call:
## gnm(formula = Abundance ~ Recruitment, family = "quasipoisson",
       data = BIOVEG)
##
##
## Coefficients:
## (Intercept)
                Recruitment
      3.117131
                   -0.007054
##
##
## Deviance:
                         758.0411
## Pearson chi-squared: 783.8135
## Residual df:
                         148
anova(N.gnm2, test = "F")
```

```
## Analysis of Deviance Table
##
## Model: quasipoisson, link: log
## Response: Abundance
##
## Terms added sequentially (first to last)
##
##
               Df Deviance Resid. Df Resid. Dev
                                                     F Pr(>F)
##
## NULL
                                 149
                                          758.90
## Recruitment 1 0.86347
                                 148
                                          758.04 0.163 0.687
summary(N.gnm2)
##
## Call:
## gnm(formula = Abundance ~ Recruitment, family = "quasipoisson",
       data = BIOVEG)
##
## Deviance Residuals:
               1Q Median
##
      Min
                               3Q
                                      Max
## -4.399 -2.119 -0.451
                                    6.557
                            1.632
##
## Coefficients:
                Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
##
                                               <2e-16 ***
## (Intercept) 3.117131
                           0.059166
                                    52.684
## Recruitment -0.007054
                           0.017604
                                     -0.401
                                                0.689
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
##
## (Dispersion parameter for quasipoisson family taken to be 5.296138)
##
## Residual deviance: 758.04 on 148 degrees of freedom
## AIC: NA
## Number of iterations: 4
```

GAM (Generalized Aditive Models)

For a GAM model example, let's assume that we only have fixed effects data(e.g. vegetation type). We will use the same variables as used for the model in a pre-test for linearity ,using the function "crPlots" of the package "car". Since "P_mg_100g" and "K_mg_100g" demonstrated the greatest deviation from linearity, we apply a smoothing term (s) for them in the model.

```
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(Hogweed,4)</pre>
```

```
Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
Species.richness
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
## 1
       s1
                                                0.5
                                                           70
18
## 2
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
       s2
                                                0.7
                                                           65
19
## 3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
       s3
                                                0.4
                                                           30
16
## 4
       s4
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.9
                                                           90
23
##
     Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
Inclination
                0.9
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB
## 1
                               80
                                                         295.653
2
## 2
                                       NONE
                1.4
                               65
                                              TREESHRUB
                                                         295.653
2
## 3
                1.7
                               90
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB
                                                         295,653
2
## 4
                1.0
                                20
                                       NONE
                                                   NONE 292.112
2
     Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
## 1
                  0.19
                            3.99
                                      22.27
## 2
                             3.56
                                      12.49
              W
                  0.19
## 3
                            8.44
                                      39.95
                  0.19
              W
## 4
              W
                  0.12
                            2.53
                                      12.34
# install.packages("mgcv")
library(mgcv) # carry out GAM model
spp.gam<- gam(log(Species.richness) ~ s(P_mg_100g) + s(K_mg_100g) +</pre>
Veg.cover,
                                               data=Hogweed,
family="gaussian")
summary(spp.gam)
##
## Family: gaussian
## Link function: identity
##
## Formula:
## log(Species.richness) ~ s(P_mg_100g) + s(K_mg_100g) + Veg.cover
## Parametric coefficients:
               Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
## (Intercept) 2.504829
                          0.075790 33.050 < 2e-16 ***
                                     4.795 3.32e-06 ***
## Veg.cover 0.005250
                          0.001095
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '* 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
```

```
## Approximate significance of smooth terms:
## edf Ref.df F p-value
## s(P_mg_100g) 5.987 6.993 3.956 0.000447 ***
## s(K_mg_100g) 7.544 8.421 2.087 0.050678 .
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
##
## R-sq.(adj) = 0.267 Deviance explained = 32%
## GCV = 0.19193 Scale est. = 0.1771 n = 201
```

In the summary, we can see two types of output: parametric coefficients, i.e., the slope of the predictor that indicated a linear relationship and was not subjected to smoothing and the non-linear predictors which were smoothed, showing their F and p-values for significance. The edf refers to the estimated degrees of freedom and basically, the larger the number, the wigglier the fitted model. Values close to 1 indicate a linear term.

```
anova(spp.gam) # the output is quite similar to the summary
##
## Family: gaussian
## Link function: identity
##
## Formula:
## log(Species.richness) \sim s(P_mg_100g) + s(K_mg_100g) + Veg.cover
##
## Parametric Terms:
             df F p-value
##
## Veg.cover 1 23 3.32e-06
##
## Approximate significance of smooth terms:
                  edf Ref.df
##
                               F p-value
## s(P_mg_100g) 5.987 6.993 3.956 0.000447
## s(K_mg_100g) 7.544 8.421 2.087 0.050678
```

Below we calculate a measure for correlation (analogous to collinearity) known as concurvity, between the predictors in the model, to consider non-linear correlations. The range is from 0 to 1. The closer the value is to 1, the higher the correlation. To know more about concurvity read:

Marra, G. & Wood, S. N. Practical variable selection for generalized additive models. Comput. Stat. Data Anal. 55, 2372-2387 (2011).

```
concurvity(spp.gam, full=FALSE)

## $worst

## para s(P_mg_100g) s(K_mg_100g)

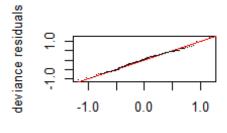
## para 1.000000e+00 1.496793e-25 4.372779e-26

## s(P_mg_100g) 1.509192e-25 1.000000e+00 9.988476e-01

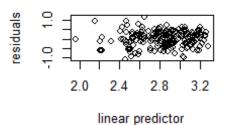
## s(K_mg_100g) 4.316333e-26 9.988476e-01 1.000000e+00

##
```

```
## $observed
##
                        para s(P_mg_100g) s(K_mg_100g)
## para
                1.000000e+00 5.574905e-28 3.880743e-27
## s(P_mg_100g) 1.509192e-25 1.000000e+00 5.477266e-01
## s(K mg 100g) 4.316333e-26 3.313584e-01 1.000000e+00
##
## $estimate
##
                        para s(P_mg_100g) s(K_mg_100g)
## para
                1.000000e+00
                              2.91690e-28 2.149244e-28
## s(P_mg_100g) 1.509192e-25
                              1.00000e+00 5.080148e-01
## s(K_mg_100g) 4.316333e-26
                              4.49389e-01 1.000000e+00
# Residuals
par(mfrow = c(2,2))
gam.check(spp.gam)
```

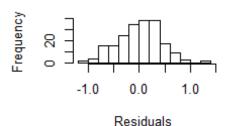


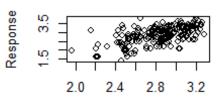
Resids vs. linear pred.



theoretical quantiles

Histogram of residuals





Fitted Values

Response vs. Fitted Values

```
##
## Method: GCV Optimizer: magic
## Smoothing parameter selection converged after 8 iterations.
## The RMS GCV score gradient at convergence was 2.668476e-06 .
## The Hessian was positive definite.
## Model rank = 20 / 20
##
## Basis dimension (k) checking results. Low p-value (k-index<1) may
## indicate that k is too low, especially if edf is close to k'.
##</pre>
```

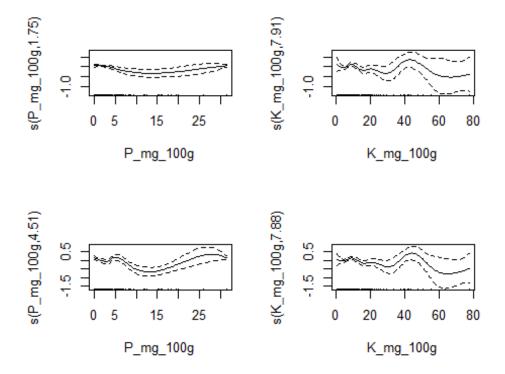
```
## k' edf k-index p-value
## s(P_mg_100g) 9.00 5.99 1.09 0.83
## s(K_mg_100g) 9.00 7.54 1.14 0.95
```

Here the graphical residuals look generally acceptable, since the histogram is not that nice (i.e. symmetrical).

Together with the graphical residuals, the model returns a written output that shows parameters for each predictor with its smoothing term e.g. "k", "edf", "K-index" and its p-value. "k-index" is the ratio of neighbor differencing scale estimate to fitted model scale estimate; "edf" is the previously mentioned estimated degrees of freedom and "k" is the maximum possible EDF for the term. These parameters test whether the basis dimension for smoothing is adequate for the predictor.

For further details regarding this kind of residual diagnostic, please consult the documentation of the function "gam.check" of the package "mgcv". One way to correctly apply a smoothing term for the predictor is to choose the most appropriate and insert it into the model using the argument "bs". Look for "smooth.terms" in the mgcv documentation.

In order to test for improvement of the fit of the model, we included the type of smoothing with the argument "bs" and used "K" to choose the number of knots (k) once cubic regression splines have a set number of knots. The default of knots automatically defined by the model "spp.gam" was 9. Let's test the model fit with 6 and 9 knots. Here we apply "cc" (cyclic cubic regression splines) smoothing to "bs" because of the observed tendency of non-linear fitting in a pre-diangostic graph with the function "crPLots" of package "car". Here we test of redefine the knots for the predictor P_mg_100g because it was diagnosed as being the most non-linear, and improving its fit also may improve the overall fit of the model.



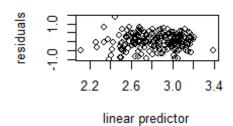
We can see that setting models with 6 and 9 knots provides similar model fitting. Thus, the first model (spp.gam) with 9 knots defined automatically by the model is already sufficient for a good model fit.

If we still call the residuals for each model test (6 and 9 knots), the degrees of freedom (EDF) of the smoothers are close especially for the predictor "K_mg_100g" and they kindex is nonsignificant.

```
par(mfrow = c(2,2))
gam.check(spp.gam2)
```

deviance residuals -1.0 0.0 1.0

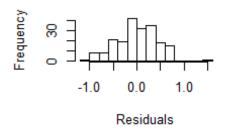
Resids vs. linear pred.

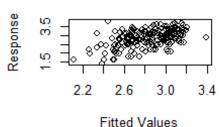


Histogram of residuals

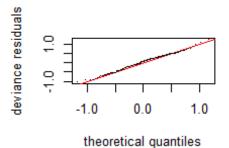
theoretical quantiles

Response vs. Fitted Values

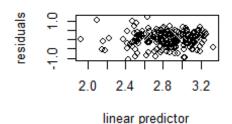




```
##
## Method: GCV
                 Optimizer: magic
## Smoothing parameter selection converged after 11 iterations.
## The RMS GCV score gradient at convergence was 1.500108e-07 .
## The Hessian was positive definite.
## Model rank = 15 / 15
##
## Basis dimension (k) checking results. Low p-value (k-index<1) may
## indicate that k is too low, especially if edf is close to k'.
##
                      edf k-index p-value
##
## s(P_mg_100g) 4.00 1.75
                             0.99
                                     0.44
## s(K_mg_100g) 9.00 7.91
                             1.18
                                     0.99
par(mfrow = c(2,2))
gam.check(spp.gam3)
```

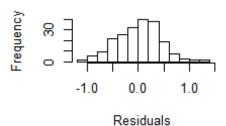


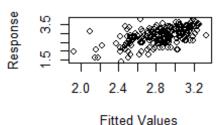
Resids vs. linear pred.



Histogram of residuals

Response vs. Fitted Values





```
##
## Method: GCV
                 Optimizer: magic
## Smoothing parameter selection converged after 6 iterations.
## The RMS GCV score gradient at convergence was 1.702051e-07 .
## The Hessian was positive definite.
## Model rank = 18 / 18
## Basis dimension (k) checking results. Low p-value (k-index<1) may
## indicate that k is too low, especially if edf is close to k'.
##
##
                      edf k-index p-value
## s(P_mg_100g) 7.00 4.51
                             1.08
## s(K_mg_100g) 9.00 7.88
                             1.15
                                     0.99
```

GAMM (Generalized Aditive Mixed Models)

To simulate a GAMM model we take the dependent and almost all predictor variables as we used in the previous GAM example. Our intention here is to also include random effects in our modeling, rather than only fixed effects as we did in GAM analysis.

```
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")</pre>
head(Hogweed, 4)
     Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
Species.richness
```

```
## 1
                  VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                  0.5
                                                             70
       s1
18
## 2
                  VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                  0.7
       s2
                                                             65
19
                  VOL ruderal.grass 2002
## 3
       s3
                                                  0.4
                                                             30
16
## 4
                  VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                  0.9
                                                             90
       s4
23
##
     Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
Inclination
## 1
                 0.9
                                 80
                                        NONE
                                                TREESHRUB
                                                           295.653
2
## 2
                 1.4
                                 65
                                        NONE
                                                TREESHRUB
                                                           295.653
2
## 3
                 1.7
                                        NONE
                                 90
                                                TREESHRUB
                                                           295.653
2
## 4
                 1.0
                                 20
                                        NONE
                                                     NONE
                                                           292.112
2
##
     Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
## 1
              W
                   0.19
                              3.99
                                       22.27
## 2
                                       12.49
              W
                   0.19
                             3.56
                                       39.95
## 3
              W
                   0.19
                             8.44
## 4
                   0.12
                             2.53
                                       12.34
              W
library(mgcv) # carry out GAMM model
spp.gamm<- gamm(log(Species.richness) ~ s(Hogweed.cover) + s(P_mg_100g),</pre>
random =
                           list(Study.area = ~ 1), data=Hogweed,
family="gaussian")
summary(spp.gamm)
       Length Class Mode
##
## lme 18
               1me
                     list
## gam 31
              gam
                     list
```

Similar to the summary of the GAM model, we have two types of output: parametric coefficients i.e., the slope of the predictor that indicated a linear relationship and was not smoothed and the non-linear predictors with smoothing and their F and p-values for significance.

```
anova(spp.gamm$gam)

##
## Family: gaussian
## Link function: identity
##
## Formula:
## log(Species.richness) ~ s(Hogweed.cover) + s(P_mg_100g)
##
```

```
## Approximate significance of smooth terms:

## edf Ref.df F p-value

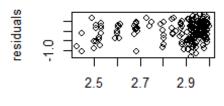
## s(Hogweed.cover) 2.528 2.528 11.014 4.22e-06

## s(P_mg_100g) 1.000 1.000 0.133 0.715
```

Below we again conduct a measure for by concurvity between the predictors in the model, to consider non-linear correlations.

```
concurvity(spp.gamm$gam, full=FALSE)
## $worst
##
                            para s(Hogweed.cover) s(P_mg_100g)
## para
                    1.000000e+00
                                      5.664068e-17 1.496793e-25
                                      1.000000e+00 1.688794e-01
## s(Hogweed.cover) 5.664067e-17
## s(P_mg_100g)
                    1.479572e-25
                                      1.688794e-01 1.000000e+00
##
## $observed
##
                            para s(Hogweed.cover) s(P_mg_100g)
## para
                    1.000000e+00
                                      4.617211e-23 4.695046e-33
## s(Hogweed.cover) 5.664067e-17
                                      1.000000e+00 5.838020e-02
## s(P_mg_100g)
                    1.479572e-25
                                      1.101885e-01 1.000000e+00
##
## $estimate
##
                            para s(Hogweed.cover) s(P_mg_100g)
                    1.000000e+00
                                      9.403869e-20 2.916900e-28
## para
                                      1.000000e+00 4.726491e-02
## s(Hogweed.cover) 5.664067e-17
## s(P_mg_100g)
                    1.479572e-25
                                      8.170693e-02 1.000000e+00
# Residuals
par(mfrow = c(2,2))
gam.check(spp.gamm$gam)
```

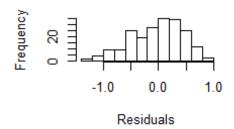

Resids vs. linear pred.

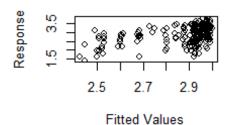


Theoretical Quantiles linear predictor

Histogram of residuals

Response vs. Fitted Values





```
##
  'gamm' based fit - care required with interpretation.
## Checks based on working residuals may be misleading.
## Basis dimension (k) checking results. Low p-value (k-index<1) may
## indicate that k is too low, especially if edf is close to k'.
##
                          edf k-index p-value
##
                                         0.005 **
## s(Hogweed.cover) 9.00 2.53
                                 0.78
## s(P_mg_100g)
                    9.00 1.00
                                 0.90
                                         0.080 .
## ---
                   0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
## Signif. codes:
```

Here the graphical residuals looks fine in general. However, the predictor "Hogweed.cover" has significant low p-value for k. In order to remember: "k-index" is the ratio of the neighbor differencing scale estimate to fitted model scale estimate; "edf" is the previously mentioned estimated degrees of freedom and "k" is the maximum possible EDF for the term. These parameters test whether the basis dimension for a smoothing is adequate for the predictor. Therefore, here you can try to improve the model by setting different number of knots (k) and maybe choosing another smooth term for this predictor (e.g. "gp" (Gaussian process), "tp" (Thin plate regression splines) and others. Please, check this out searching for "smooth.terms" documentation of the package mgcv.

Random Forest

The Random Forest model is a supervised learning technique that generates multiple models from a training dataset on the given data and then simply combines their output rules (predictive variables), thus generating a robust high performance model that corrects overfitting and balances variance inequalities. That is, this model improves the predictive power from decision trees, reducing their variances by calculating their averages. The decision tree is a type of modeling that operates with information gain on each node, classifying data points with greater information increment on each node. When all nodes are depleted for their information gain ratings, the model achieves its optimal performance result. Thus, the Random Forest model is considered, in many cases, to be the most robust decision tree approach.

In its results, the Random Forest provides a percentage explanation of the Y variance from the whole set of predictors considered. It also provides the mean square residual error in the predictions from an approach called "Out of Bag Error Estimation (OBB)", a robust and efficient method of fitting and error estimation.

```
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")</pre>
Hogweed$Plot <- as.integer(Hogweed$Plot) # Transform predictor Plot that</pre>
is factor
                                          # in integer, since random Forest
cannot
                                          # handle more the 53 categories
head(Hogweed, 4)
     Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
Species.richness
## 1
        1
                  VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.5
                                                             70
18
## 2
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.7
     110
                                                             65
19
## 3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
     126
                                                 0.4
                                                             30
16
## 4 137
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.9
                                                             90
23
     Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
##
Inclination
## 1
                0.9
                                80
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 2
                 1.4
                                65
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 3
                1.7
                                90
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 4
                1.0
                                20
                                        NONE
                                                    NONE
                                                          292.112
```

```
Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
##
## 1
                   0.19
                             3.99
                                       22.27
              W
## 2
              W
                   0.19
                             3.56
                                       12.49
## 3
                   0.19
                             8.44
                                       39.95
## 4
                   0.12
                             2.53
                                       12.34
# install.packages("randomForest")
library(randomForest)
```

Below we split our data in train (70% of data) and test (30% of data) sets.

```
set.seed(100)
train <- sample(nrow(Hogweed), 0.7*nrow(Hogweed), replace = FALSE)
train <- sort(train)</pre>
TrainSet <- Hogweed[train,] # split the data in train set</pre>
TestSet <- Hogweed[-train,] # split the data in test set
head(TrainSet)# visualize if all variables are present in train set
##
      Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
## 2
                   VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                   0.7
## 3
                                                              30
       126
                   VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                   0.4
## 4
       137
                   VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                   0.9
                                                              90
## 5
                                                   0.7
                                                              75
       148
                   VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                              90
## 8
       181
                   REN ruderal.grass 2002
                                                   0.8
## 12
        22
                   REN agr.grassland 2002
                                                   0.7
                                                              95
      Species.richness Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover
##
                                                          Land.use
Disturbance
## 2
                     19
                                    1.4
                                                   65
                                                              NONE
TREESHRUB
## 3
                     16
                                    1.7
                                                   90
                                                              NONE
TREESHRUB
## 4
                     23
                                    1.0
                                                    20
                                                              NONE
NONE
## 5
                     27
                                    0.8
                                                   20
                                                              NONE
NONE
## 8
                     32
                                    1.1
                                                   45 MAINTENANCE
NONE
## 12
                     27
                                    0.6
                                                     5
                                                         GRASSLAND
NONE
      Altitude Inclination Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
##
## 2
       295.653
                          2
                                          0.19
                                                     3.56
                                                              12.49
                                      W
## 3
       295.653
                          2
                                          0.19
                                                     8.44
                                                              39.95
                                      W
                          2
## 4
       292.112
                                      W
                                          0.12
                                                     2.53
                                                              12.34
## 5
                          2
                                                     2.53
       292.112
                                      W
                                          0.12
                                                              12.34
                          2
                                      S
## 8
       371.930
                                          0.21
                                                     0.55
                                                               6.97
## 12 377.433
                          1
                                      S
                                          0.22
                                                     7.44
                                                              18.27
head(TestSet)# visualize if all variables are present in test set
```

```
##
      Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
## 1
         1
                   VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                   0.5
                                                              70
                            woodland 2002
                                                               5
## 6
       159
                                                   0.2
                                                              95
## 7
       170
                   REN agr.grassland 2002
                                                   0.8
## 9
                   REN ruderal.grass 2002
       191
                                                   0.8
                                                              90
                   REN agr.grassland 2002
## 10
         2
                                                   0.7
                                                              90
## 11
        11
                          tall.herbs 2002
                                                   0.5
                   REN
                                                              20
##
      Species.richness Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover
                                                          Land.use
Disturbance
## 1
                     18
                                    0.9
                                                    80
                                                              NONE
TREESHRUB
## 6
                     16
                                    0.8
                                                    10
                                                              NONE
NONE
## 7
                     33
                                    1.0
                                                    45
                                                         GRASSLAND
SOILDIS
## 9
                     19
                                    1.1
                                                    85 MAINTENANCE
NONE
## 10
                     28
                                    0.8
                                                    10
                                                         GRASSLAND
NONE
## 11
                     16
                                    1.8
                                                    90
                                                               NONE
SOILDIS
      Altitude Inclination Exposition N perc P mg 100g K mg 100g
## 1
       295.653
                          2
                                                     3.99
                                      W
                                          0.19
                                                              22.27
## 6
       298.394
                          2
                                          0.16
                                                     2.62
                                                              10.77
                                     NW
## 7
       394.018
                          2
                                      S
                                          0.24
                                                     5.42
                                                              20.46
## 9
       371.930
                          2
                                      S
                                          0.21
                                                     0.55
                                                               6.97
## 10
       374.018
                          0
                                      0
                                          0.22
                                                     5.86
                                                              15.13
                          0
## 11
       379.444
                                      0
                                          0.38
                                                     0.96
                                                              20.34
summary(TrainSet)# visualize if all data for train set is correct, i.e.
##
         Plot
                        Study.area
                                           Habitat.type
                                                              Year
##
   Min.
           : 4.00
                      NIE
                             :14
                                    agr.grassland:28
                                                         Min.
                                                                 :2002
##
    1st Qu.: 55.75
                      RUH
                              :14
                                    ruderal.grass:38
                                                         1st Ou.:2002
                                    tall.herbs
##
   Median :103.00
                      HEL
                              :13
                                                  :46
                                                         Median :2002
                                    wasteland
##
    Mean
           :103.11
                      ENG
                              :11
                                                  :13
                                                         Mean
                                                                 :2002
##
    3rd Ou.:150.25
                      DOM
                              :10
                                    woodland
                                                  :15
                                                         3rd Ou.:2003
           :200.00
                              : 9
##
    Max.
                      BRE
                                                         Max.
                                                                 :2003
##
                      (Other):69
##
      Veg.height
                                       Species.richness Hogweed.height
                        Veg.cover
                                               : 4.00
                                                         Min.
##
    Min.
           :0.1000
                      Min.
                            : 1.00
                                       Min.
                                                                 :0.2500
##
    1st Qu.:0.3500
                      1st Qu.:40.00
                                       1st Qu.:13.00
                                                         1st Qu.:0.6875
##
    Median :0.5000
                      Median :80.00
                                       Median :18.00
                                                         Median :0.9000
##
    Mean
           :0.5539
                      Mean
                             :64.49
                                       Mean
                                               :19.44
                                                         Mean
                                                                 :0.9246
                      3rd Qu.:90.00
##
    3rd Qu.:0.7000
                                       3rd Qu.:25.25
                                                         3rd Qu.:1.1000
##
           :1.7000
                             :99.00
    Max.
                      Max.
                                       Max.
                                               :47.00
                                                         Max.
                                                                 :1.9000
##
##
                                          Disturbance
                                                          Altitude
    Hogweed.cover
                            Land.use
##
    Min.
           : 1.00
                     GRASSLAND :18
                                       DEPORG
                                                 : 6
                                                       Min.
                                                               :127.6
                     MAINTENANCE:26
                                                 :13
##
    1st Qu.:10.00
                                       FLOOD
                                                       1st Qu.:208.0
```

```
Median :20.00
                                :96
                                      NONE :99
                                                      Median:322.0
                     NONE
           :34.55
                                       SOILDIS : 7
##
    Mean
                                                      Mean
                                                              :357.9
    3rd Qu.:60.00
                                       TREESHRUB: 15
                                                      3rd Qu.:439.5
##
    Max.
           :95.00
                                                      Max.
                                                             :977.0
##
##
     Inclination
                      Exposition
                                     N perc
                                                     P_mg_100g
           : 0.0
                                                   Min. : 0.000
##
    Min.
                    0
                           :95
                                 Min.
                                        :0.0400
    1st Qu.: 0.0
                                 1st Qu.:0.2100
                                                   1st Qu.: 0.525
##
                   W
                           :12
##
    Median: 0.0
                    Ε
                           :10
                                 Median :0.2700
                                                   Median : 1.405
    Mean
         : 1.4
                    SW
                           : 8
                                 Mean
##
                                         :0.2853
                                                   Mean
                                                          : 3.128
##
    3rd Ou.: 2.0
                    S
                           : 5
                                 3rd Ou.:0.3425
                                                   3rd Qu.: 3.377
##
    Max. :30.0
                           : 4
                                 Max.
                                        :1.0300
                                                   Max.
                                                          :31.420
##
                    (Other): 6
##
      K_mg_100g
    Min. : 1.440
##
    1st Qu.: 5.728
##
##
    Median : 8.329
##
    Mean
           :11.639
##
    3rd Qu.:13.135
##
    Max.
           :77.769
##
# Min, Median, Mean, Max...
summary(TestSet) # visualize if all data for test set is correct
##
         Plot
                        Study.area
                                           Habitat.type
                                                             Year
##
    Min.
           : 1.00
                      GOE
                             : 6
                                   agr.grassland: 8
                                                        Min.
                                                                :2002
##
    1st Ou.: 46.00
                      NIE
                             : 6
                                   ruderal.grass:15
                                                        1st Ou.:2002
    Median :100.00
                                   tall.herbs
                                                        Median :2002
                      WAT
                             : 6
                                                 :31
##
                             : 5
    Mean
          : 96.16
                      RUH
                                   wasteland
                                                 : 3
                                                        Mean
##
                                                               :2002
##
    3rd Qu.:156.00
                      WEN
                             : 5
                                   woodland
                                                 : 4
                                                        3rd Qu.:2003
           :201.00
##
    Max.
                      DAH
                             : 4
                                                        Max.
                                                                :2003
##
                      (Other):29
##
      Veg.height
                        Veg.cover
                                     Species.richness Hogweed.height
##
    Min.
           :0.2000
                      Min.
                             : 5.0
                                     Min.
                                             : 5.00
                                                       Min.
                                                               :0.300
    1st Qu.:0.4000
                                     1st Qu.:13.00
                                                       1st Qu.:0.800
##
                      1st Qu.:40.0
##
    Median :0.5000
                      Median :70.0
                                     Median :17.00
                                                       Median :1.000
                                             :18.33
##
    Mean
           :0.5893
                      Mean
                             :61.9
                                     Mean
                                                       Mean
                                                               :1.023
                      3rd Qu.:90.0
                                     3rd Qu.:24.00
                                                       3rd Qu.:1.200
##
    3rd Qu.:0.7000
           :1.4000
                     Max.
                             :98.0
                                     Max.
                                             :46.00
                                                       Max.
                                                               :2.400
##
    Max.
##
##
    Hogweed.cover
                            Land.use
                                         Disturbance
                                                         Altitude
                     GRASSLAND : 6
##
    Min.
         : 5.00
                                      DEPORG
                                                : 5
                                                      Min.
                                                             :104.5
##
    1st Qu.:15.00
                     MAINTENANCE: 7
                                       FL00D
                                                : 8
                                                      1st Qu.:206.9
    Median :40.00
                                                :36
                                                      Median :316.1
##
                     NONE
                                :48
                                       NONE
##
    Mean
           :43.11
                                       SOILDIS : 7
                                                      Mean
                                                             :329.7
##
    3rd Qu.:75.00
                                       TREESHRUB: 5
                                                      3rd Qu.:355.0
##
           :90.00
    Max.
                                                      Max.
                                                              :978.0
##
##
     Inclination
                        Exposition
                                       N_perc
                                                       P_mg_100g
```

```
Min.
                                                Min. : 0.020
   Min. : 0.000
                          :28
                   0
                                       :0.0900
                          : 8
##
   1st Qu.: 0.000
                   S
                                1st Qu.:0.2000
                                                1st Qu.: 0.820
                          : 8
## Median : 1.000
                   W
                                Median :0.2500
                                                Median : 2.280
   Mean : 1.918
                          : 5
                    Ε
                                Mean
                                       :0.2721
                                                Mean : 3.431
   3rd Qu.: 2.000
                          : 5
                                3rd Qu.:0.3400
##
                                                3rd Qu.: 4.040
                    N
   Max. :25.000
                          : 2
##
                    NW
                                Max. :0.7200
                                                Max. :26.010
##
                    (Other): 5
##
     K mg 100g
##
   Min. : 0.75
##
   1st Qu.: 6.32
##
   Median : 7.90
## Mean :12.39
##
   3rd Qu.:14.78
##
   Max. :47.74
##
```

Verify the best number of predictors (mtry) per node (split) in the branches of the decision trees. The function "mtry" shows from which number of predictors per node the prediction errors are lower, based on OBB error (Out of bag) estimation.

```
# check how many predictors per node reduce error:

tuneRF(Hogweed, Hogweed$Species.richness)

## mtry = 5  00B error = 6.304418

## Searching left ...

## mtry = 3  00B error = 12.58651

## -0.9964583 0.05

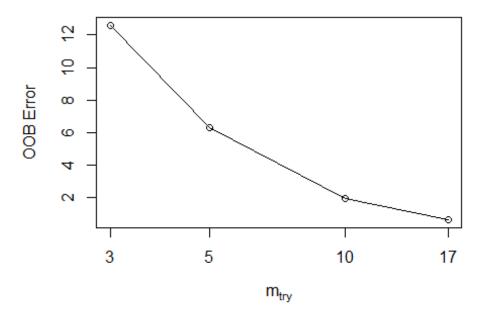
## Searching right ...

## mtry = 10  00B error = 1.960619

## 0.6890087 0.05

## mtry = 17  00B error = 0.6492911

## 0.6688337 0.05
```



```
## mtry 00BError
## 3 3 12.5865073
## 5 5 6.3044180
## 10 10 1.9606194
## 17 17 0.6492911
```

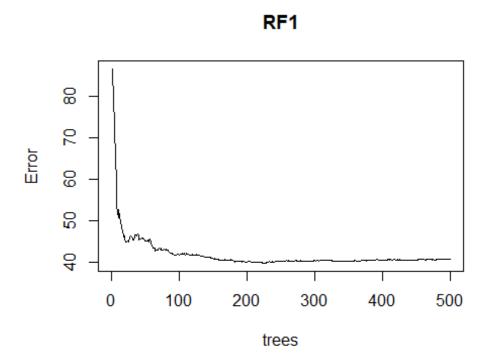
The outcome shows that increasing the number of predictors per node of the trees decreases the error. Thus, we include all predictors (16) per node in the model.

```
## Mean of squared residuals: 40.6848
## % Var explained: 47.48
```

The model with train subset performed poorly regarding the percentage of variance explained in the prediction of species richness by the selected set of predictors.

Let's see if the number of decision (500) chosen for the model were enough to reduce the errors:

plot(RF1)



The output shows that 500 trees are sufficient to reduce error, since from approximately 100 trees, the error starts to decrease.

Importance of predictors

Here we check which predictors are the least and most important when predicting the variation of the dependent variable. The variable importance in Random Forest is computed based on Node Purity and Mean squared error. Node purity measures the total decrease of impurities in the nodes (splits) by computing the average of each predictor over the nodes of all trees, being measured, in regression, by the sum of the squares residuals. Of these two approaches for importance, Mean squared error (%IncMSE) is the most robust and informative measure, where the higher number, the more important the variable. Conversely, IncNodePurity is biased and should only be used if the extra computation time of calculating %IncMSE is challenging. Since the

%IncMSE is calculated based on OBB estimation, the expectation is that the MSE will increase, especially if the variable has some importance, thus the label "% IncMSE".

```
import<- importance(RF1)</pre>
import
##
                    %IncMSE IncNodePurity
## Plot
                                294.35118
                  5.5707559
## Study.area
                 37.1460387
                               5757.91498
## Habitat.type
                                558.60044
                 10.9296666
## Year
                  1.7781753
                                  5.62926
## Veg.height
                  4.6763764
                                250.32433
## Veg.cover
                 12.7326538
                                652,26748
## Hogweed.height 10.7277820
                                627.23769
## Hogweed.cover 2.2307121
                                341.24214
## Land.use
               -0.8118798
                                27.13485
## Disturbance 8.2167514
                                221.78219
## Altitude
                 6.3721603
                                387.67738
## Inclination
                  1.0159853
                                66.17019
## Exposition
                  6.1613376
                                228.69195
## N perc
                  0.4512169
                                389.86253
## P_mg_100g
                  3.2757968
                                362.76719
## K_mg_100g
                  3.2115987
                                378.80948
```

The outcome states that the most important predictors based on %IncMSE. Remember that the higher number, the more important the variable.

```
### save output of importance
write.table(import, "Importance.csv", row.names=T, sep=",", dec=".")
```

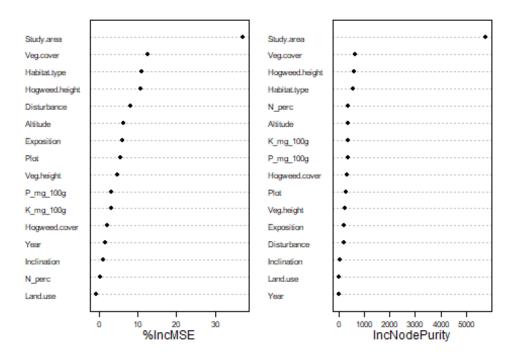
Note: Prior to selecting the predictor variables for the Random Forest model, verify whether there is high correlation among them. The presence of highly correlated predictors may bias the computation of importance of each one, for predicting the dependent variable, leading to suboptimal predictor variables being artificially and arbitrarily preferred. For more information about this topic, please read the recommended papers below:

Strobl C, Boulesteix AL, Zeileis A, Hothorn T.Bias in random forest variable importance measures: illustrations, sources and a solution. BMC Bioinformatics, 2007 Jan 25;8:25

Strobl C et al. Conditional variable importance for random forests. BMC Bioinformatics, BMC Bioinformatics. 2008 Jul 11;9:307

```
# Shows and save importance graphically
# library(lattice) # save the figure:
# tiff(filename="Fig_IMPORTANCE2019.jpg", width=180, height=80,
units="mm", res=300)
```

train



dev.off() ## turn off the graphics device

Comparison of the level of error

Here we compare the level of error of the model in relation to the number of predictors per node for the train (70%) and test (30%) set.

The OBB (out of bag error estimation) is computed to the train set and compared to the test set (test.err).

Here we simulate whether the inclusion of all predictors per node of the trees delivers a better or worse performance for the random forest prediction of both train and test set. Then, we reduce the number of trees from 500 to 400 to better fit the whole number of predictors per node.

```
oob.err=double(16) # 16 regards to total number of predictors
test.err=double(16)

for(mtry in 1:16)
{
    rf=randomForest(Species.richness ~ . , data = Hogweed , subset =
    train,mtry=mtry,ntree=400)
    oob.err[mtry] = rf$mse[400] # Error of all trees adjusted
```

```
pred<-predict(rf,Hogweed[-train,]) # Prediction in test set for each</pre>
tree
 # Mean Squared Test Error:
 test.err[mtry]= with(Hogweed[-train,], mean( (Species.richness -
pred)^2))
  cat(mtry," ") # show the outcome in R console
}
## 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16
test.err
## [1] 37.56997 37.04643 35.65082 34.96186 35.11245 34.40052 34.58925
## [8] 35.19916 35.18508 35.20572 34.94613 35.69522 35.74131 35.61271
## [15] 36.48326 36.70819
oob.err
## [1] 41.77874 39.09036 39.01873 40.45448 40.88128 38.47648 40.33007
## [8] 40.92160 39.89282 39.65230 40.56144 40.65620 40.93758 41.32343
## [15] 41.05698 40.28447
matplot(1:mtry , cbind(oob.err,test.err), pch=19 ,
col=c("red","blue"),type="b",
        ylab="Mean Squared Error",xlab="Number of Predictors Considered
at each Split")
legend("center",legend=c("Out of Bag Error","Test Error"),pch=19,
col=c("red","blue"))
```



Number of Predictors Considered at each Split

The graph shows that the mean squared error increases slightly in both Out of bag error and test error as the number of predictors increases at each split (node).

In addition, we can check the performance using cross-validation prediction of models with the number of predictors reducing sequentially. In such reduction, the predictors are ranked by variable importance via a nested cross-validation procedure.

```
rfcv(Hogweed, Hogweed$Species.richness, cv.fold=5)
## $n.var
## [1] 17 8
##
## $error.cv
##
                     8
## 8.1906159 7.5375960 2.3589484 2.8383323 0.2002621
##
## $predicted
## $predicted$\17\
     [1] 17.672433 18.030300 15.337233 22.282800 24.021633 16.897033
##
28.913267
     [8] 30.135833 21.520233 26.856300 16.746733 27.260633 15.721633
13.453567
   [15] 16.507900 19.716600 19.747133 15.485233 23.652200 16.815933
24.503100
   [22] 22.552900 17.388367 14.350433 20.736033 19.691367 17.359300
22.121633
  [29] 23.384767 16.301267 18.328810 16.987533 21.580133 28.771967
```

```
29.188067
## [36] 26.065800 26.761333 26.772533 17.291400 14.992867 17.186533
17.125033
## [43] 15.659167 27.405367 25.042533 18.814633 26.539867 24.301533
23.922633
## [50] 16.988333 23.194133 18.075133 20.801600 20.664733 13.250767
21.020300
## [57] 16.391500 23.097700 15.034967 23.521000 19.750467 19.035967
19.168633
## [64] 12.197600 34.648433 37.296667 34.424167 35.882700 18.934800
18.836767
## [71] 33.501167 33.183117 33.556867 35.460467 32.355019 31.523833
31.131150
## [78] 35.963300 34.821252 24.151800 18.554567 19.276467 26.590133
17.334467
## [85] 23.964333 33.287267 34.879767 30.707700 28.321700 11.301900
27.049000
## [92] 20.093867 15.456833 21.126567 26.666367 17.503700 11.657867
10.735600
## [99] 25.840033 12.995600 24.447533 13.827533 17.571000 13.038833
13.499533
## [106] 25.906633 13.412100 12.218733 12.546467 17.482067 16.671900
11.202300
## [113] 19.190967 21.911667 16.418367 25.308133 25.034100 18.914567
12.792400
## [120] 15.181300 16.227733 13.116067 16.928833 13.013033 9.636533
19.637000
## [127] 20.578267 20.131900 21.181867 14.218033 16.712400 12.863433
12.921967
## [134] 13.020267 10.116367 23.466033 20.984467 19.057300 10.998900
10.120700
## [141] 9.287533 18.225333 9.547233 9.134967 8.096767 10.089367
8.693533
## [148] 10.924900 9.687600 24.000233 14.142300 13.719800 12.156467
12.001210
## [155] 20.968167 20.483967 15.667233 11.203767 19.519567 12.295833
13.258667
## [162] 13.845200 14.621967 15.481133 19.361033 12.083700 19.578633
13.317233
## [169] 14.865433 9.688533 15.565467 22.156700 13.765967 13.456500
18.772900
## [176] 19.198500 24.825433 24.813933 24.400967 15.700033 15.560467
12.014700
## [183] 12.644733 16.194233 11.878667 13.769267 24.687300 17.350267
17.200533
## [190] 15.981167 23.297533 17.945867 16.097367 24.255900 17.967033
11.776433
## [197] 8.376100 10.382467 9.064367 13.487167 9.122070
##
## $predicted$`8`
```

```
[1] 18.116733 18.126933 15.723933 22.454233 24.285667 16.398400
29.517467
    [8] 29.963467 22.252033 27.218952 17.309400 27.075233 15.536100
12.620533
## [15] 16.625233 20.241433 19.972967 15.291467 24.122667 16.771933
24.833400
## [22] 22.103367 16.993800 14.029033 21.285200 19.938267 17.170667
21.810833
## [29] 23.199733 16.683500 18.138267 16.906467 21.281517 29.320400
29.480067
## [36] 26.056467 27.337767 26.539644 17.502833 14.980733 17.348533
17.096700
## [43] 16.152967 26.927667 24.674417 17.953719 26.677167 24.512167
23.674633
## [50] 16.476633 23.604467 18.917233 20.689300 21.145200 14.290233
21.287433
## [57] 16.929605 22.788733 14.713551 23.325417 19.193729 19.671600
19.142833
## [64] 11.580233 34.646300 37.674133 33.600860 36.438800 18.194833
17.889467
## [71] 34.581089 33.990619 33.871003 35.782237 31.630133 31.568895
30.632357
## [78] 36.010570 35.352333 23.402848 17.586800 18.367733 27.925500
17.136033
## [85] 23.778133 33.513500 35.149200 30.216333 28.386048 11.168900
26.099367
## [92] 20.632433 15.224500 20.282500 26.349352 16.572314 10.853590
10.018400
## [99] 26.105267 12.398033 24.829967 13.971211 17.908500 12.965700
12.644400
## [106] 25.938133 12.814267 11.794100 12.365571 17.487189 16.183822
10.824133
## [113] 19.566083 21.403833 16.790533 25.751767 25.046300 18.981100
12.734217
## [120] 15.307400 16.545148 13.253267 17.106744 12.791500 9.175417
19.800333
## [127] 20.900289 19.650748 20.956702 13.157933 16.599721 12.890300
13.050700
## [134] 13.447033 10.493267 23.443367 20.432548 18.341200 10.189233
9.109056
## [141] 8.470224 17.970205 8.876167 8.468467 7.727737 9.864000
7.637333
## [148] 11.161133 10.037378 23.758833 13.002300 12.467600 13.099267
11.540633
## [155] 20.825200 20.320633 15.355167 11.915652 20.090500 12.285867
13.461900
## [162] 14.167667 15.082633 15.264667 19.589133 12.044767 19.478533
12.663900
## [169] 14.029000 9.381533 15.104767 22.091367 13.700367 12.204567
19.020767
```

```
## [176] 18.804800 26.312500 25.430600 24.673867 15.513867 15.223122
11.019733
## [183] 11.540633 16.449700 11.563200 13.683000 24.501300 17.617633
17.253200
## [190] 16.538467 23.473733 18.063133 16.176200 23.753533 18.022900
11.770067
## [197] 8.699633 11.045514 8.279405 12.382867 8.730467
##
## $predicted$`4`
    [1] 17.750167 18.466400 16.463486 22.696867 25.482767 16.509300
##
30.831333
     [8] 31.563824 19.849000 27.984700 17.509233 27.711600 16.321033
12.082710
## [15] 16.505933 19.929367 19.960767 13.345500 24.779633 16.891033
25.840567
## [22] 23.781867 18.819767 13.786767 22.185633 19.621900 18.111729
22.974833
## [29] 23.548717 14.315633 17.749367 17.434067 22.896033 30.233400
30.114533
## [36] 24.698967 27.248367 28.303600 16.544633 14.148200 13.839567
15.686333
## [43] 15.941600 28.901067 24.559567 16.581233 28.406767 24.902133
23.747433
## [50] 15.290767 23.963933 18.996833 20.171867 20.638967 10.823533
22.096967
## [57] 15.988533 23.364100 12.915667 24.937500 19.775067 19.495833
19.332933
## [64] 10.041567 38.423719 39.251933 33.473267 37.672843 17.778433
17.875167
## [71] 36.410476 32.496133 33.923733 37.679667 32.597395 32.953867
29.819300
## [78] 37.929033 37.975662 27.130800 16.481833 17.497656 27.634400
14.211567
## [85] 26.671700 36.368010 33.783367 31.540433 30.491233 7.590767
29.423967
## [92] 20.375567 14.521233 23.098233 27.788167 11.939467 8.732333
7.345867
## [99] 27.775033 10.179133 24.565400 12.338067 14.354389 13.715000
11.535067
## [106] 27.672767 12.465609 9.570033 11.614776 17.443833 17.251300
10.133972
## [113] 19.850408 22.378731 18.067008 28.004567 25.957386 19.995667
13.836188
## [120] 14.856810 16.913900 13.061010 17.246547 12.163976 10.102440
22.359767
## [127] 21.681471 20.255424 21.866667 12.123310 17.356333 11.366974
11.571700
## [134] 12.514600 8.733243 25.397267 22.448857 18.832767 11.164756
9.326433
## [141] 7.127914 20.512133 7.124732 8.702437 6.914995 9.219770
```

```
6.767932
## [148] 8.740200 10.283953 26.025367 13.127467 8.618733 11.518867
12.318400
## [155] 21.395200 20.650800 14.775233 11.834176 20.594133 8.933057
11.965867
## [162] 12.787900 14.311533 15.684467 19.305100 11.397092 20.404967
13.187200
19.046300
## [176] 19.552300 27.749967 27.810200 24.189333 15.367367 14.879600
10.721067
## [183] 12.573667 15.732900 9.634867 12.902543 28.063500 17.034067
16.789124
## [190] 16.160500 24.752733 17.044157 15.420533 26.447033 18.000033
9.768800
## [197] 6.171900 8.501300 6.115067 9.768800 8.204167
##
## $predicted$`2`
    [1] 17.787040 18.181932 16.632162 21.921698 24.699109 16.639488
##
30.531218
    [8] 30.576731 19.284859 28.418904 19.138840 27.493669 16.360752
12.651008
## [15] 16.861102 19.802243 19.869078 13.436114 24.217259 16.995212
25.390292
## [22] 24.036283 18.841096 13.961400 21.874063 19.720772 18.089957
22.938552
## [29] 23.477464 14.321937 17.238112 17.238112 22.868158 29.968024
29.862916
## [36] 24.681682 27.274289 28.606017 16.974477 14.218342 14.465759
15.687248
## [43] 16.230523 29.081856 24.696822 16.974477 28.424022 25.165656
23.877056
## [50] 15.290838 23.792054 18.852658 20.010010 20.522011 10.359489
21.901176
## [57] 15.802248 23.725885 13.380539 25.235175 19.920152 19.797138
19.091288
## [64] 10.213443 38.705436 38.274362 33.322843 37.466634 18.894488
19.215907
## [71] 38.074276 33.121619 33.941686 37.535152 32.143752 33.168057
30.853352
## [78] 37.720419 37.777322 27.926648 16.635544 17.820417 28.139450
14.936017
## [85] 25.674017 35.336478 33.607119 31.410933 30.327167 7.934058
28.560792
## [92] 20.719517 13.810440 23.403379 27.331679 8.948105 8.740511
7.679971
## [99] 27.913372 10.369589 24.586772 12.220422 12.651138 13.686083
11.401056
## [106] 27.372650 12.813737 10.025589 11.155855 17.727375 17.727375
9.724002
```

```
## [113] 20.101996 22.572533 17.975740 28.094633 25.906639 19.967648
13.582827
## [120] 14.807249 16.818869 13.143854 16.775789 12.199573 9.769508
22.605948
## [127] 21.846125 20.277087 21.746721 12.199573 17.196954 11.310406
11.454073
## [134] 12.929044 9.541178 24.918511 22.396997 18.344693 11.028118
9.097739
## [141] 6.729909 20.460728 7.251395 8.802724 7.049811 9.287457
6.709190
## [148] 7.206243 10.301729 25.372677 12.463781 8.442183 11.521914
12.463781
## [155] 21.181562 21.002762 14.363596 11.591981 20.918180 8.727583
11.729165
## [162] 12.387132 13.879798 15.816133 19.492891 11.671132 19.900694
12.813791
## [169] 13.014660 8.331275 16.447662 22.042219 13.222043 9.309317
18.484167
## [176] 19.805973 27.394183 27.616381 23.723647 14.920914 14.891754
11.314526
## [183] 12.995476 16.192886 10.997498 13.652834 27.724741 16.894200
16.743327
## [190] 16.082700 25.050559 16.743327 15.487371 27.632429 17.422239
8.728471
## [197] 6.789937 7.802499 6.277764 8.728471 8.423148
##
## $predicted$\1\
    [1] 18.007267 18.912267 15.998000 22.984867 26.946633 16.000000
##
32.948233
     [8] 32.009600 18.971067 27.851233 15.992667 26.982400 16.000000
10.992200
## [15] 17.000000 19.999500 19.999200 13.002000 25.020267 17.000400
26.946633
## [22] 25.028800 18.966167 12.999200 21.998867 19.999500 18.013467
22.999200
## [29] 24.012667 13.974700 17.000400 17.000400 22.991733 32.012933
31.018900
## [36] 24.000933 26.982133 29.001433 16.999400 14.008900 12.999200
14.998700
## [43] 15.992667 28.984400 23.994333 16.999400 27.915000 25.986633
24.002633
## [50] 14.998700 24.012667 18.912267 19.999200 20.884667 9.009600
21.993033
## [57] 15.992667 24.000933 13.002000 25.941600 19.999500 20.0000000
18.963867
## [64] 7.966500 43.760033 39.087567 30.010533 39.282800 15.992667
14.978900
## [71] 39.685600 30.956600 32.883100 39.025367 31.963233 33.236500
25.941600
## [78] 39.282067 37.749400 28.998067 16.000000 17.000000 29.956367
```

```
11.998000
## [85] 25.985967 42.349167 33.008267 32.861333 30.988533 6.728400
35.017633
## [92] 20.884667 14.995767 22.991733 27.851233 8.999900 9.009600
5.289000
## [99] 29.009233 9.009600 24.980967 11.996400 12.997300 14.001100
10.983067
## [106] 27.905300 13.000000 7.996067 10.967867 18.008267 18.008267
9.667167
## [113] 19.993600 21.997967 18.019567 30.014967 25.982000 19.999200
13.991600
## [120] 15.000000 17.000400 12.999200 16.999400 11.996800 9.667167
22.993633
## [127] 21.998867 20.884667 22.007867 11.996800 18.008267 10.986467
10.992200
9.009600
## [141] 5.806033 21.994767 6.728400 9.002433 6.927633 9.892267
5.101500
## [148] 6.864700 10.986467 29.009333 12.997300 5.725900 10.967867
12.997300
## [155] 21.994767 20.993000 14.999600 12.002500 20.884667 7.978767
10.983067
## [162] 11.996400 14.008900 15.992667 19.993600 10.967867 20.993000
12.999200
## [169] 12.997300 5.756767 16.999400 24.998867 13.974700 7.966500
19.999500
## [176] 19.993600 28.998067 29.956367 23.994333 14.995767 14.978900
7.960967
## [183] 13.000000 17.000000 6.728400 12.002500 29.001433 17.000000
16.999400
## [190] 15.998000 24.990767 16.999400 14.978900 29.009233 19.993600
9.002433
## [197] 5.101500 7.985400 4.953067 9.002433 8.997300
```

The section "\$error.cv" in the output show us that reducing number of predictors decreases the rates of error in the performance of the model. This outcome make sense and is congruent with large amount of predictors with low importance for the model prediction observed above.

Prediction performance

In order to verify the percentage of explanation for the Random Forest model we can adjust a linear model to get a value for R-squared. We do this for the test set created above. If 30% of data from the test produces a high performance, your prediction is good.

```
predTest <- predict(RF1, TestSet)</pre>
r2_test <- lm(predTest ~ TestSet$Species.richness)</pre>
summary(r2_test)
##
## Call:
## lm(formula = predTest ~ TestSet$Species.richness)
## Residuals:
               1Q Median
##
      Min
                               3Q
                                      Max
## -6.3940 -3.0597 -0.1885 2.3862 10.6701
##
## Coefficients:
                           Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
##
## (Intercept)
                           11.04786 1.25847
                                                 8.779 2.67e-12 ***
## TestSet$Species.richness 0.44538
                                       0.06282 7.090 1.91e-09 ***
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
## Residual standard error: 3.968 on 59 degrees of freedom
## Multiple R-squared: 0.46, Adjusted R-squared: 0.4509
## F-statistic: 50.26 on 1 and 59 DF, p-value: 1.907e-09
```

The adjusted R-squared shows that the prediction performance of the model is not good, since it predicts less than 50 % of the dependent variable.

Nevertheless, you do not need necessarily to use a linear model to check on prediction performance. You could also calculate the correlation coefficient and, then, square it:

```
cor(predTest, TestSet$Species.richness) ^ 2
## [1] 0.4600236
```

RMSE

We can adjust a RMSE (Root mean squared error) for the model. The RMSE is particularly useful when it is compared with other models to see if it performs better or worse depending if it has a higher or lower error of prediction.

```
rfvalpred = predict(RF1,newdata=TestSet)
rmse = sqrt(mean((TestSet$Species.richness-rfvalpred)^2))
rmse
## [1] 6.010385
```

Model Selection (Akaike)

For both Akaike and GLM / GLMM the predictor variables must be tested for the degree of correlation, because if these variables are highly correlated, it implies collinearity, and the real contributions of each predictor to the dependent variable may be confounded. One conventional way to test correlation, and collinearity, is the Pearson's correlation (described in this script). Pearson correlation coefficients can be between -1 and 1, and the accepted limit for collinearity is |0.60|. Correlations above 0.60 indicate too much collinearity between predictors. On the other hand, many authors accept correlations up to 0.70 and use variables with this degree of correlation in the model.

Akaike's function: select the best regression model according to the relationship between the dependent and predictor variables. The best model is normally assumed to be the one with the lowest AICc value. However, the quantity of models considered to be good does not necessarily follow a specific rule, since it depends on your purpose and research approach. It also can depend on the statistical line you follow. Some researchers suggest that a difference between AIC values smaller than 2 (i.e. delta AIC =< 2) indicates that the models are almost equally good. Others use a threshold level of delta AIC =< 4.

```
GLM's Akaike selection
## Akaike: basic syntax
## install and load "MuMIn" package
# Usage
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")</pre>
head(Hogweed, 4)
     Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
##
Species.richness
## 1
       s1
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.5
                                                             70
18
## 2
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
       s2
                                                 0.7
                                                             65
19
## 3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
       s3
                                                 0.4
                                                             30
16
## 4
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.9
                                                             90
       54
23
##
     Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
Inclination
## 1
                0.9
                                80
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 2
                1.4
                                65
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB 295.653
2
```

```
## 3
                                      NONE
                1.7
                               90
                                             TREESHRUB
                                                         295.653
2
## 4
                1.0
                               20
                                      NONE
                                                   NONE
                                                         292.112
2
##
     Exposition N perc P mg 100g K mg 100g
## 1
              W
                  0.19
                            3.99
                                     22.27
## 2
                  0.19
                            3.56
                                     12.49
              W
## 3
                  0.19
                            8.44
                                     39.95
              W
## 4
                  0.12
                            2.53
                                     12.34
# install.packages("MuMIn")
library(MuMIn)
options(na.action = "na.fail")
div <- glm(Veg.height ~ P_mg_100g + K_mg_100g + Land.use,</pre>
family=gaussian,
           data=Hogweed)
tested.div1 <- dredge(div)</pre>
tested.div1
## Global model call: glm(formula = Veg.height ~ P mg 100g + K mg 100g +
Land.use,
##
       family = gaussian, data = Hogweed)
## ---
## Model selection table
      (Int)
              K_mg_100 Lnd.use P_mg_100 df logLik AICc delta weight
##
## 7 0.3256
                             + 0.006875 5 -23.238 56.8 0.00
## 3 0.3396
                                         4 -24.592 57.4 0.60 0.306
                             + 0.008192 6 -23.093 58.6 1.83 0.165
## 8 0.3330 -0.0011540
## 4 0.3336 0.0006829
                                         5 -24.525 59.4 2.57 0.114
## 5 0.5353
                               0.009135 3 -32.343 70.8 14.02 0.000
## 6 0.5399 -0.0005695
                               0.009789 4 -32.310 72.8 16.04 0.000
## 1 0.5647
                                          2 -34.565 73.2 16.41 0.000
## 2 0.5450 0.0016610
                                         3 -34.197 74.5 17.73 0.000
## Models ranked by AICc(x)
```

LME's Akaike selection

Firstly you must carry out the pre-tests with LM in the model to be executed as LME model. If normality and linearity are accepted, then, you check for spatial autocorrelation by Moran's I. If there is significant autocorrelation you must model include a spatial correlation structure (e.g. corExp) within the global LME that will be submited to selection by Akaike such as the example below.

Example of LM model to check for linearity and autocorrelation for the global LME model to execute Akaike's selection:

Firstly you must conduct pre-tests with LMs in the model to be executed as LME model. If normality and linearity are acceptable, you must then check for spatial autocorrelation by Moran's I. If there is significant autocorrelation your model must

include a spatial correlation structure (e.g. corExp) within the global LME, which will be submitted to selection by Akaike criteria, as described in the example below.

```
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG,4)
##
             type Plot Site
                                            Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea_triplinervia
                                                           8
                                                                 27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                               Amaioua_intermedia
                                                          10
                                                                39.15
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                      Aniba firmula
                                                                33.93
                                                          10
                                      Annona cacans
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                                          10
                                                                40.43
     Mean_diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation_mean
##
Temperature mean
## 1
             6.357
                        0.058
                                      7
                                                      1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                        0.120
                                     12
                                                      1250
24.4
## 3
                        0.090
                                     10
             6.632
                                                      1250
24.4
## 4
             6.626
                        0.128
                                     19
                                                      1250
24.4
     Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x
                                                    utm.y local.utm.x
## 1
          6.94
                     14.34
                                0
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                               747923
          2.74
                      6.94
                                         0 747923 7807727
## 2
                               -10
                                                                747913
## 3
          1.71
                      2.35
                               -20
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                               747903
                      2.47
## 4
                               -30
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                               747893
          1.60
     local.utm.y
## 1
        7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
        7807727
## 4
         7807727
Mean.Diameter.pre <- lm(Mean diameter ~ Mortality + Recruitment +
Richness + Site,
data=BIOVEG)
## LME's Akaike selection
library(nlme) # LME models
library(MuMIn) # Dredge function to execute the selection
options(na.action = "na.fail")
div <- lme(Mean_diameter ~ Mortality + Recruitment + Richness,</pre>
data=BIOVEG, method="ML", random= ~1 Site,
corr=corExp(form=~local.utm.x+local.utm.y Site),
                                  weights=varIdent(form=~1 | Site),
na.action=na.fail)
```

```
tested.div1 <- dredge(div)</pre>
tested.div1
## Global model call: lme.formula(fixed = Mean diameter ~ Mortality +
Recruitment +
##
       Richness, data = BIOVEG, random = ~1 | Site, correlation =
corExp(form = ~local.utm.x +
       local.utm.y | Site), weights = varIdent(form = ~1 | Site),
##
##
       method = "ML", na.action = na.fail)
## ---
## Model selection table
                                     Rchns df logLik AICc delta weight
##
     (Intrc)
               Mrtlt
                          Rcrtm
## 1
       10.67
                                            6 -40.724 94.0 0.00 0.403
       10.67 0.001550
                                            7 -40.609 96.0
## 2
                                                             1.97 0.150
## 3
       10.67
                      -0.002797
                                            7 -40.678 96.1 2.11 0.140
## 5
       10.68
                                -0.0007914 7 -40.686 96.2
                                                             2.13 0.139
       10.67 0.001605 -0.003023
## 4
                                            8 -40.555
                                                      98.1 4.10 0.052
## 6
       10.67 0.001428
                                -0.0005343 8 -40.593
                                                      98.2 4.17
                                                                  0.050
                      -0.002982 -0.0008561 8 -40.634 98.3
## 7
       10.69
                                                            4.25
                                                                   0.048
## 8
       10.68 0.001472 -0.003134 -0.0005951 9 -40.535 100.4 6.32 0.017
## Models ranked by AICc(x)
## Random terms (all models):
## '1 | Site'
```

QAIC - QUASI Akaike

QAIC - Quasipoisson

s4

16 ## 4

23

When the generalized model shows oversdispersion, the typical AIC value cannot be computed using the dredge function. Instead, the QAIC value needs to be computed. With the function "QAIC" (Quasi AIC) of the package MuMIn, calculated a modification of Akaike's Information Criterion for overdispersed count data (e.g. quasipoisson model) can be calculated, but it also may also be used to compute QAIC for binomial data (e.g. quasipoisson).

```
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")</pre>
head(Hogweed, 4)
     Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
##
Species.richness
## 1
       s1
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.5
                                                             70
18
## 2
       s2
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                 0.7
                                                             65
19
## 3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                             30
       53
                                                 0.4
```

0.9

90

VOL ruderal.grass 2002

```
Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
Inclination
## 1
                0.9
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                80
                                                          295.653
2
## 2
                1.4
                                65
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 3
                1.7
                                90
                                        NONE
                                               TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 4
                1.0
                                20
                                        NONE
                                                    NONE 292.112
2
##
     Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
## 1
              W
                   0.19
                             3.99
                                       22.27
                   0.19
                             3.56
                                       12.49
## 2
              W
## 3
                                       39.95
                  0.19
                             8.44
## 4
                  0.12
                             2.53
                                      12.34
              W
# install.packages("MuMIn")
library(MuMIn)
options(na.action = "na.fail")
```

Fist, we execute the function for "x.quasipossion" constructor, which allows for quasipoisson family objects, for ML estimation.

To compute the variance inflation factor based on residuals of Pearson, where it is necessary to use the "dredge" function to compute the QAIC values and its parameters. There is a discussion among statisticians regarding whether residuals of Pearson are suitable for models (e.g. Poisson and Binomial) based on Chisq, but there are various examples where it provides a robust and reliable fit.

```
chat<-sum(residuals(riqueza.glm2, "pearson")^2)/riqueza.glm2$df.residual
chat

## [1] 3.231642

riqueza.QAIC <- dredge(riqueza.glm2, rank = "QAIC", chat = chat)

## Fixed term is "(Intercept)"

riqueza.QAIC

## Global model call: glm(formula = Species.richness ~ P_mg_100g +
Land.use + K_mg_100g +
Hogweed.height, family = "x.quasipoisson", data = Hogweed)</pre>
```

```
## ---
## Model selection table
     (Int) Hgw.hgh K_mg_100 Lnd.use P_mg_100 df logLik QAIC delta
weight
                                     -0.02074 3 -788.820 496.2 0.00
## 10 3.412 -0.4344
0.478
## 12 3.432 -0.4319 -0.002688
                                  -0.01770 4 -787.878 497.6 1.42
0.235
## 14 3.433 -0.3805
                                  + -0.01978 5 -786.527 498.8 2.58
0.131
## 16 3.449 -0.3805 -0.002554 + -0.01689 6 -785.687 500.2 4.06
0.063
                                              3 -795.857 500.5 4.35
## 4 3.433 -0.4422 -0.006557
0.054
                                              5 -792.800 502.6 6.46
## 8 3.450 -0.3837 -0.006229
0.019
                                              2 -803.606 503.3 7.15
## 2 3.368 -0.4539
0.013
## 6 3.396 -0.3839
                                              4 -799.668 504.9 8.71
0.006
                                   + -0.02047 4 -814.401 514.0 17.83
## 13 3.263
0.000
                                   + -0.01747 5 -813.488 515.5 19.27
## 15 3.280
                  -0.002651
0.000
## 7 3.277
                   -0.006323
                                              4 -820.933 518.1 21.87
                                   +
0.000
## 5 3.222
                                              3 -827.998 520.4 24.25
0.000
## 9 3.022
                                     -0.02408 2 -839.309 525.4 29.25
0.000
                                     -0.02014 3 -837.648 526.4 30.22
## 11 3.050
                   -0.003526
0.000
## 3 3.038
                   -0.007717
                                               2 -847.930 530.8 34.58
0.000
## 1 2.950
                                               1 -858.742 535.5 39.27
0.000
## Models ranked by QAIC(x, chat = 3.23164202774229)
```

We can compare the QAIC selection by using Pearson's residuals to fit variance inflation factor, by dividing the deviance by residual degrees of freedom.

```
chat2=(deviance(riqueza.glm2) / df.residual(riqueza.glm2))
riqueza2.QAIC <- dredge(riqueza.glm2, rank = "QAIC", chat = chat2)
## Fixed term is "(Intercept)"
riqueza2.QAIC
## Global model call: glm(formula = Species.richness ~ P_mg_100g +
Land.use + K_mg_100g +</pre>
```

```
## Hogweed.height, family = "x.quasipoisson", data = Hogweed)
## ---
## Model selection table
     (Int) Hgw.hgh K_mg_100 Lnd.use P_mg_100 df logLik QAIC delta
weight
                                   -0.02074 3 -788.820 497.1 0.00
## 10 3.412 -0.4344
0.478
                                  -0.01770 4 -787.878 498.5 1.42
## 12 3.432 -0.4319 -0.002688
0.235
## 14 3.433 -0.3805
                                + -0.01978 5 -786.527 499.6 2.58
0.132
## 16 3.449 -0.3805 -0.002554
                                + -0.01689 6 -785.687 501.1 4.06
0.063
## 4 3.433 -0.4422 -0.006557
                                             3 -795.857 501.4 4.36
0.054
## 8 3.450 -0.3837 -0.006229 +
                                             5 -792.800 503.5 6.47
0.019
## 2 3.368 -0.4539
                                             2 -803.606 504.2 7.17
0.013
## 6 3.396 -0.3839
                                             4 -799.668 505.8 8.73
0.006
                                 + -0.02047 4 -814.401 514.9 17.86
## 13 3.263
0.000
                                 + -0.01747 5 -813.488 516.3 19.29
## 15 3.280
           -0.002651
0.000
## 7 3.277
                -0.006323
                                             4 -820.933 519.0 21.91
0.000
## 5 3.222
                                             3 -827.998 521.3 24.29
0.000
                                    -0.02408 2 -839.309 526.4 29.30
## 9 3.022
0.000
## 11 3.050
                 -0.003526
                                  -0.02014 3 -837.648 527.3 30.27
0.000
## 3 3.038
             -0.007717
                                             2 -847.930 531.7 34.65
0.000
                                             1 -858.742 536.4 39.35
## 1 2.950
0.000
## Models ranked by QAIC(x, chat = 3.2258850123267)
```

We see that the outcomes of QAIC selection using the two approaches above, to compute 'chat' as the variance inflation factors, results in virtually the same outcomes.

```
QAIC - Quasibinomial
# install.packages("MuMIn")
library(MuMIn)
```

```
Hogweed <- read.table("Hogweed.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")</pre>
head(Hogweed, 4)
     Plot Study.area Habitat.type Year Veg.height Veg.cover
##
Species.richness
## 1
       s1
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.5
                                                            70
18
## 2
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
                                                0.7
       s2
                                                            65
19
       s3
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
## 3
                                                0.4
                                                            30
16
                 VOL ruderal.grass 2002
## 4
                                                0.9
                                                            90
       s4
23
     Hogweed.height Hogweed.cover Land.use Disturbance Altitude
##
Inclination
## 1
                0.9
                                80
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 2
                1.4
                                65
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB
                                                          295.653
2
## 3
                1.7
                                90
                                       NONE
                                              TREESHRUB 295.653
2
## 4
                1.0
                                20
                                       NONE
                                                   NONE 292.112
2
##
     Exposition N_perc P_mg_100g K_mg_100g
## 1
                             3.99
                                      22.27
              W
                  0.19
## 2
                  0.19
                             3.56
                                      12.49
              W
## 3
                  0.19
                             8.44
                                      39.95
              W
                             2.53
## 4
                  0.12
                                      12.34
```

First, let's execute a 'hacked' constructor for quasibinomial family object for ML estimation

```
## Global model call: glm(formula = Hogweed.cover/100 ~ Veg.height +
N_perc + Habitat.type +
     Land.use + P_mg_100g, family = "x.quasibinomial", data = Hogweed)
## Model selection table
     (Int) Hbt.typ Lnd.use N_prc P_mg_100 Veg.hgh df logLik
AICc
## 18 -1.0670
                                        -1.4490 6 -103.960
220.4
## 22 -0.9835 + -0.26910 -1.4480 7 -103.885
222.3
                               -0.0021020 -1.4450 7 -103.923
## 26 -1.0640
222.4
                      -0.26550 -0.0003552 -1.4470 8 -103.880
## 30 -0.9841 +
224.5
## 20 -1.2730 + +
                                        -1.5110 8 -104.183
225.1
                     + -0.0035190 -1.5050 9 -104.119
## 28 -1.2680 +
227.2
## 24 -1.2030 + + -0.22390 -1.5090 9 -104.125
227.2
## 32 -1.2070 + + -0.20140 -0.0021360 -1.5050 10 -104.093
229.3
## 2 -1.6180 +
                                               5 -111.991
234.3
                              -0.0112400
                                            6 -111.663
## 10 -1.5930
235.8
## 6 -1.5310 +
                      -0.28200
                                              6 -111.911
236.3
                      -0.18180 -0.0099980 7 -111.649
## 14 -1.5390
237.9
## 4 -1.7550 +
                                               7 -112.295
239.2
## 12 -1.7290 + + -0.0121200 8 -111.946
240.6
             +
## 8 -1.6720
                     + -0.27060
                                              8 -112.220
241.2
## 16 -1.6840 + + -0.15350 -0.0110100 9 -111.937
242.8
                                       -1.0910 4 -118.099
## 19 -1.3360
244.4
                     + 0.66320 -1.1130 5 -117.915
## 23 -1.5340
246.1
                     + 0.0093530 -1.1100 5 -118.169
## 27 -1.3480
246.6
                     + 0.61040 0.0053720 -1.1220 6 -117.969
## 31 -1.5250
248.4
## 17 -0.2031
                                        -0.5782 2 -123.782
251.6
## 3 -1.6940
                                        3 -122.882
```

| 251.9 ## 21 -0. | 2390 | | 0.12860 | | -0.5786 | 3 | -123.786 | |
|--------------------------|-----------|---|----------|------------|---------|---|----------|--|
| 253.7 | 2330 | | 0.12000 | | 0.3700 | , | 123.700 | |
| ## 25 -0.2347 | | | | 0.0172700 | -0.6221 | 3 | -123.797 | |
| 253.7 | | | | | | | | |
| ## 7 -1.8480 | | + | 0.50420 | | | 4 | -122.812 | |
| 253.8 | | | | | | | | |
| ## 1 -0.5257 | | | | | | 1 | -125.948 | |
| 253.9 | | | | 0 0022620 | | 4 | 122 020 | |
| ## 11 -1.6990 254.0 | | + | | 0.0023620 | | 4 | -122.920 | |
| ## 29 -0.2312 | | | -0.01305 | 0.0173400 | -0.6222 | 4 | -123.796 | |
| 255.8 | | | 0.01303 | 0.01/5400 | 0.0222 | 7 | 123.750 | |
| ## 15 -1.8490 | | + | 0.51560 | -0.0011110 | | 5 | -122.792 | |
| 255.9 | | | | | | | | |
| ## 5 -0.5598 | | | 0.12110 | | | 2 | -125.954 | |
| 256.0 | | | | | | | | |
| ## 9 -0.5636 | | | | 0.0116700 | | 2 | -126.068 | |
| 256.2 ## 13 -0. | 5600 | | 0 02260 | 0.0115400 | | 2 | 126 060 | |
| 258.3 | 7099 | | 0.02303 | 0.0113400 | | 5 | -120.008 | |
| ## del | ta weight | | | | | | | |
| ## 18 0. | | | | | | | | |
| ## 22 2. | 0.182 | | | | | | | |
| | 07 0.176 | | | | | | | |
| ## 30 4. | | | | | | | | |
| | 76 0.046 | | | | | | | |
| ## 28 6. | | | | | | | | |
| ## 24 6.8 ## 32 8.9 | | | | | | | | |
| ## 2 13.5 | | | | | | | | |
| ## 10 15.4 | | | | | | | | |
| ## 6 15. | | | | | | | | |
| ## 14 17. | 53 0.000 | | | | | | | |
| ## 4 18. | 32 0.000 | | | | | | | |
| ## 12 20. | | | | | | | | |
| ## 8 20. | | | | | | | | |
| ## 16 22.4 ## 19 24.0 | | | | | | | | |
| ## 19 24. | | | | | | | | |
| ## 27 26. | | | | | | | | |
| ## 31 28. | | | | | | | | |
| ## 17 31. | | | | | | | | |
| ## 3 31. | 53 0.000 | | | | | | | |
| ## 21 33. | | | | | | | | |
| ## 25 33. | | | | | | | | |
| ## 7 33.4 | | | | | | | | |
| ## 1 33. | | | | | | | | |
| ## 11 35. | | | | | | | | |
| "" 27 77. | 0.000 | | | | | | | |

```
## 15 35.54 0.000

## 5 35.62 0.000

## 9 35.85 0.000

## 13 37.91 0.000

## Models ranked by AICc(x)
```

MODEL AVERAGING

With the function "model.avg" of the package MuMIn we can compute model averaging based on an information criterion (e.g. AIC (Akaike) or BIC (Baysean)).

```
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=TRUE, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG, 4)
##
             type Plot Site
                                             Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea triplinervia
                                                           8
                                                                 27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                               Amaioua intermedia
                                                           10
                                                                 39.15
                                      Aniba firmula
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                                           10
                                                                 33.93
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                      Annona cacans
                                                           10
                                                                 40.43
     Mean_diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation_mean
Temperature_mean
## 1
                        0.058
                                       7
             6.357
                                                       1250
24.4
## 2
                                      12
             6.524
                        0.120
                                                       1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                                      10
                        0.090
                                                       1250
24.4
## 4
             6.626
                        0.128
                                      19
                                                       1250
24.4
     Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x
##
                                                     utm.y local.utm.x
## 1
          6.94
                     14.34
                                 0
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                747923
## 2
          2.74
                      6.94
                                -10
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                747913
## 3
          1.71
                      2.35
                                -20
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                747903
## 4
                      2.47
                               -30
                                         0 747923 7807727
                                                                747893
          1.60
##
     local.utm.y
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
library(MuMIn)
options(na.action = "na.fail")
riqueza <- glm(Richness ~ Mortality + Recruitment + Diameter
               + Temperature_mean, family=gaussian, data=BIOVEG)
riqueza.AICc <- dredge(riqueza)</pre>
## Fixed term is "(Intercept)"
riqueza.AICc
```

```
## Global model call: glm(formula = Richness ~ Mortality + Recruitment +
Diameter +
      Temperature mean, family = gaussian, data = BIOVEG)
## ---
## Model selection table
      (Int) Dmt Mrt Rcr Tmp_men df logLik AICc delta
##
weight
                                        3 -483.219 972.6 0.00
## 5 15.920
                         -0.3395
0.140
## 1 15.060
                                        2 -484.472 973.0 0.42
0.113
## 6 14.730 0.04540
                        -0.3990
                                        4 -482.416 973.1 0.50
0.108
                         -0.4582 0.47360 4 -482.436 973.1 0.55
## 13 5.449
0.106
## 7 16.350 -0.1435 -0.3391 4 -482.774 973.8 1.22
0.076
## 14 5.844 0.03940 -0.4936 0.40910 5 -481.840 974.1 1.49
0.066
## 3 15.500 -0.1440
                                         3 -484.031 974.2 1.62
0.062
## 2 14.140 0.03131
                                         3 -484.079 974.3 1.72
0.059
## 8 15.180 0.04361 -0.1330 -0.3963 5 -482.031 974.5 1.88
0.055
## 15 6.374
             -0.1302 -0.4518 0.44970 5 -482.068 974.6 1.95
0.053
## 9 11.170
                                 0.17120 3 -484.352 974.9 2.27
0.045
## 16 6.704 0.03805 -0.1229 -0.4864 0.38880 6 -481.511 975.6 3.01
0.031
## 4 14.610 0.02957 -0.1369
                                         4 -483.680 975.6 3.03
0.031
## 11 12.080 -0.1396 0.15010 4 -483.939 976.2 3.55
0.024
                               0.10680 4 -484.035 976.3 3.74
## 10 11.780 0.02887
0.021
## 12 12.630 0.02755 -0.1348 0.08937 5 -483.649 977.7 5.11
0.011
## Models ranked by AICc(x)
```

```
Average of the best modes under delta < 4
summary(model.avg(riqueza.AICc, subset = delta < 4))
##
## Call:
## model.avg(object = riqueza.AICc, subset = delta < 4)
##</pre>
```

```
## Component model call:
## glm(formula = Richness ~ <15 unique rhs>, family = gaussian, data
##
        = BIOVEG)
##
## Component models:
          df logLik
##
                       AICc delta weight
## 3
           3 -483.22 972.60
                             0.00
                                     0.14
## (Null) 2 -484.47 973.03
                             0.42
                                     0.11
## 13
           4 -482.42 973.11
                             0.50
                                     0.11
## 34
           4 -482.44 973.15
                             0.55
                                     0.11
## 23
           4 -482.77 973.82
                             1.22
                                     0.08
## 134
           5 -481.84 974.10
                             1.49
                                     0.07
## 2
           3 -484.03 974.23
                             1.62
                                     0.06
## 1
           3 -484.08 974.32
                             1.72
                                     0.06
           5 -482.03 974.48
## 123
                             1.88
                                     0.06
## 234
           5 -482.07 974.55
                             1.95
                                     0.05
## 4
           3 -484.35 974.87
                                     0.05
                             2.27
## 1234
           6 -481.51 975.61
                             3.01
                                     0.03
           4 -483.68 975.64
## 12
                             3.03
                                     0.03
## 24
           4 -483.94 976.15 3.55
                                     0.02
## 14
           4 -484.03 976.35 3.74
                                     0.02
##
## Term codes:
                                           Recruitment Temperature_mean
##
           Diameter
                           Mortality
##
                                    2
                                                     3
                  1
##
## Model-averaged coefficients:
## (full average)
##
                    Estimate Std. Error Adjusted SE z value Pr(>|z|)
                                                       1.924
## (Intercept)
                    12.51626
                                6.47186
                                             6.50420
                                                                0.0543 .
                                                       0.965
## Recruitment
                    -0.26106
                                 0.26949
                                             0.27049
                                                                0.3345
## Diameter
                     0.01462
                                 0.02932
                                             0.02946
                                                       0.496
                                                                0.6196
## Temperature mean 0.12805
                                 0.29325
                                             0.29466
                                                       0.435
                                                                0.6639
## Mortality
                    -0.04573
                                 0.10993
                                             0.11053
                                                       0.414
                                                                0.6791
##
## (conditional average)
##
                    Estimate Std. Error Adjusted SE z value Pr(>|z|)
## (Intercept)
                    12.51626
                                 6.47186
                                             6.50420
                                                       1.924
                                                                0.0543 .
## Recruitment
                    -0.40696
                                 0.23202
                                             0.23383
                                                       1.740
                                                                0.0818 .
## Diameter
                                             0.03693
                     0.03895
                                 0.03664
                                                       1.055
                                                                0.2916
## Temperature_mean 0.36591
                                                       0.912
                                                                0.3619
                                 0.39838
                                             0.40134
                                                       0.882
                                                                0.3777
## Mortality
                    -0.13691
                                 0.15394
                                             0.15522
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
```

POST-HOC TEST TO REGRESSION MODELS

A common necessity when using GLM, LM or GLMM using categorical (factor variable) predictors, is to conduct multiple comparison of means among the pairs of categories. Such comparison using regression models is still being developed and improved. For instance, there are currently no 100% robust, standard unbiased post-hoc tests which can be applied in Mixed Models (e.g. GLMM, LME). Below we provide examples of two of the most commonly used post-hoc methods applied in Ecology but we highly advise you to read about their application and carefully consider whether their use is appropriate for your analysis.

If after you run your model, you find a significant difference of the means among categories (as shown by fitting ANOVA to count data in this GLM model example with species richness as target variable), then you need a post-hoc (posteriori) test to show you between which categories the difference occurred. Post-hoc tests on Linear Models become even more important the more predictor variables you use. If you want to run an a posteriori comparison of the model, knowing that there are significant differences among categories as there are in this example, this comparison will consider the weight of other predictor variables (e.g. k, ca, light).

```
TUKEY'S POST HOC TEST (Tukey's HSD (honest significant difference) test)
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG,4)
##
             type Plot Site
                                              Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea_triplinervia
                                                             8
                                                                   27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                                  Amaioua intermedia
                                                            10
                                                                   39.15
                                       Aniba_firmula
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                                            10
                                                                   33.93
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                       Annona cacans
                                                            10
                                                                   40.43
     Mean diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation mean
Temperature mean
## 1
                                       7
             6.357
                         0.058
                                                        1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                         0.120
                                       12
                                                        1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                         0.090
                                       10
                                                        1250
24.4
## 4
             6.626
                         0.128
                                       19
                                                        1250
24.4
     Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x
##
                                                      utm.y local.utm.x
## 1
          6.94
                      14.34
                                  0
                                           0 747923 7807727
                                                                  747923
## 2
          2.74
                       6.94
                                -10
                                           0 747923 7807727
                                                                  747913
## 3
          1.71
                       2.35
                                -20
                                           0 747923 7807727
                                                                  747903
## 4
          1.60
                       2.47
                                -30
                                           0 747923 7807727
                                                                  747893
##
     local.utm.y
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
```

```
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
# Usage
# install.packages("multcomp")
library(multcomp)
richtype <- glm(Richness ~ type, data=BIOVEG, family=poisson)
summary(richtype)
##
## Call:
## glm(formula = Richness ~ type, family = poisson, data = BIOVEG)
##
## Deviance Residuals:
##
                 10
                      Median
       Min
                                   3Q
                                           Max
## -2.8720
           -1.2326 -0.1111
                               0.8646
                                        5.5989
##
## Coefficients:
##
                    Estimate Std. Error z value Pr(>|z|)
                                0.03824 68.416 < 2e-16 ***
## (Intercept)
                     2.61593
                     0.22197
                                          4.326 1.52e-05 ***
## typeOmbrofila
                                0.05131
## typeSemidecidual 0.05268
                                0.05338
                                          0.987
                                                   0.324
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
##
## (Dispersion parameter for poisson family taken to be 1)
##
                                     degrees of freedom
       Null deviance: 350.25 on 149
## Residual deviance: 329.36 on 147 degrees of freedom
## AIC: 1007.9
##
## Number of Fisher Scoring iterations: 4
summary(glht(richtype, linfct=mcp(type = "Tukey")))
##
     Simultaneous Tests for General Linear Hypotheses
##
##
## Multiple Comparisons of Means: Tukey Contrasts
##
##
## Fit: glm(formula = Richness ~ type, family = poisson, data = BIOVEG)
##
## Linear Hypotheses:
##
                                 Estimate Std. Error z value Pr(>|z|)
                                                              < 0.001 ***
## Ombrofila - Aluvial == 0
                                             0.05131
                                                       4.326
                                  0.22197
                                                              0.58493
## Semidecidual - Aluvial == 0
                                  0.05268
                                             0.05338
                                                       0.987
## Semidecidual - Ombrofila == 0 -0.16929 0.05058 -3.347 0.00247 **
```

```
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
## (Adjusted p values reported -- single-step method)

cldm0 <- cld(glht(richtype, linfct=mcp(type = "Tukey")))
cldm0 # here show between each pairs of type there is the significant difference

## Aluvial Ombrofila Semidecidual
## "a" "b" "a"</pre>
```

LMERTEST

This test is used for mixed models (e.g. GLMM, LME) which have Pseudoreplication (when your data is distributed in subplots within each site. E.g. 3 sites with 50 10 m x 10 m plots) and you need to consider this effect (normally called random effect, but be careful when reading about this subject since there remains some disagreement between statisticians). For instance, if you need to not only consider data values per site or fragment, but also data values per subplot within each site. Suppose you need to know the phylogenetic diversity per subplot within each site, you need to recognize that the subplots are not real replicates and so you need to use a mixed model.

Atention: The "lmer test" from the package of the same name is one of the most commonly used post-hoc tests in this case, but there remain disagreements among statisticians about its robustness when homogeneity of variance and normality are violated. Read about this method and carefully consider whether it is appropriate for your analysis. The "lmerTest" package calculate p-values of differences of means among categories.

```
# install.packages("lmerTest")
library(lmerTest)
BIOVEG <- read.table("BIOVEG3.csv", header=T, sep=",", dec=".")
head(BIOVEG, 4)
##
             type Plot Site
                                             Species Richness Diameter
## 1 Semidecidual p001 AREA1 Alchornea triplinervia
                                                            8
                                                                  27.12
## 2 Semidecidual p002 AREA1
                                 Amaioua intermedia
                                                                  39.15
                                                           10
## 3 Semidecidual p003 AREA1
                                       Aniba_firmula
                                                           10
                                                                  33.93
## 4 Semidecidual p004 AREA1
                                       Annona cacans
                                                           10
                                                                  40.43
     Mean_diameter Basal.area Abundance Precipitation_mean
Temperature mean
                                       7
## 1
             6.357
                        0.058
                                                       1250
24.4
## 2
             6.524
                        0.120
                                      12
                                                       1250
24.4
## 3
             6.632
                        0.090
                                      10
                                                       1250
24.4
```

```
## 4
             6.626
                        0.128
                                      19
                                                       1250
24.4
##
     Mortality Recruitment local.x local.y utm.x
                                                     utm.y local.utm.x
## 1
          6.94
                     14.34
                                 0
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                747923
## 2
          2.74
                      6.94
                                -10
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                747913
## 3
          1.71
                      2.35
                                -20
                                          0 747923 7807727
                                                                747903
## 4
                      2.47
                                -30
                                          0 747923 7807727
          1.60
                                                                747893
##
     local.utm.y
## 1
         7807727
## 2
         7807727
## 3
         7807727
## 4
         7807727
## use to Continuos data
# call the function "glmer" from package "lme4"
DIAM<-lmer(Diameter ~ type + (1 Site), REML=FALSE, data=BIOVEG)
difflsmeans(DIAM, test.effs="type")
## Least Squares Means table:
##
##
                                     Estimate Std. Error df t value
lower
                                      -0.8800
## typeAluvial - typeOmbrofila
                                                  2.7343 150 -0.3218
6.2828
## typeAluvial - typeSemidecidual
                                      -7.8790
                                                  2.7343 150 -2.8815 -
                                                  2.7343 150 -2.5597 -
## typeOmbrofila - typeSemidecidual
                                      -6.9990
12.4018
##
                                        upper Pr(>|t|)
## typeAluvial - typeOmbrofila
                                       4.5228 0.748026
## typeAluvial - typeSemidecidual
                                      -2.4762 0.004539 **
## typeOmbrofila - typeSemidecidual
                                      -1.5962 0.011466 *
## ---
                   0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
## Signif. codes:
##
##
     Confidence level: 95%
     Degrees of freedom method: Satterthwaite
##
```

MULTIVARIATE ANALYSIS

This approach is indicated to analyze more than one statistical outcome variable at a time. Usually, multivariate analysis to establish relationships among variables, where they were sampled by multiple measurements in sample or experimental units, and their sampling design.

NMDS - Non-metric multidimensional scaling

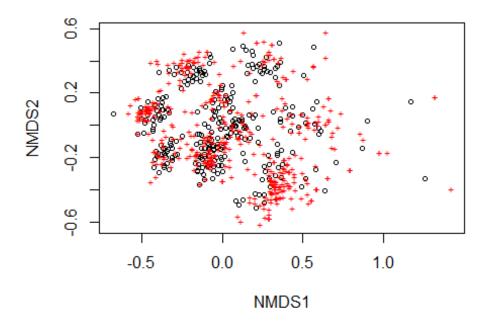
NMDS is used to robustly demonstrate the original position of data in multidimensional space using a reduced number of dimensions that can be easily plotted and visualized.

```
# use "vegan" package:
# install.packages("vegan")
library("vegan")
# Adapted NMDS template option:
matrix<- read.table("matrixspp.txt", header=T, sep="\t")</pre>
matrix[1:5,1:4] # shows only part of the data
##
     abarema_brachystachya abarema_villosa acanthocladus_pulcherrimus
## 1
## 2
                          0
                                          0
                                                                      0
                                                                      0
## 3
                         0
                                          0
## 4
                          0
                                          0
                                                                      0
## 5
                                                                      0
                                          0
     alchornea_glandulosa
##
## 1
## 2
                         0
## 3
                         0
## 4
## 5
# NMDS
NMDS bray<- metaMDS(matrix, k=2, distance="bray")
## Wisconsin double standardization
## Run 0 stress 0.2198643
## Run 1 stress 0.2216841
## Run 2 stress 0.2198769
## ... Procrustes: rmse 0.00288897 max resid 0.0325339
## Run 3 stress 0.2217402
## Run 4 stress 0.2215109
## Run 5 stress 0.2187916
## ... New best solution
## ... Procrustes: rmse 0.04319214 max resid 0.1200068
## Run 6 stress 0.2216311
## Run 7 stress 0.2194974
## Run 8 stress 0.2198929
## Run 9 stress 0.2205943
## Run 10 stress 0.2183727
## ... New best solution
## ... Procrustes: rmse 0.0179176 max resid 0.07948068
## Run 11 stress 0.2194878
```

```
## Run 12 stress 0.21851
## ... Procrustes: rmse 0.005008619 max resid 0.06515672
## Run 13 stress 0.221705
## Run 14 stress 0.2210081
## Run 15 stress 0.2198895
## Run 16 stress 0.2188199
## ... Procrustes: rmse 0.01624568 max resid 0.07908814
## Run 17 stress 0.2187936
## ... Procrustes: rmse 0.01789406 max resid 0.08045457
## Run 18 stress 0.2188017
## ... Procrustes: rmse 0.01777192 max resid 0.08036169
## Run 19 stress 0.2265645
## Run 20 stress 0.2312948
## *** No convergence -- monoMDS stopping criteria:
##
        1: no. of iterations >= maxit
##
       19: stress ratio > sratmax
NMDS_bray$stress ## < 0.3: check if it was lower like this in your
analysis
## [1] 0.2183727
```

If stress < 0.3 the program returns "TRUE" which indicates acceptable levels of stress within your model. It implies how robust your analysis' result was.

plot(NMDS_bray) ### ordinary graph, just distinction in 2 colors and symbols



```
# Save scores
write.table(NMDS_bray$points, "sitesR.txt", row.names=T, sep="\t")
write.table(NMDS_bray$species, "species.txt", row.names=F, sep="\t")
```

WARNING: The data sets used here are for training purposes only. The two matrices from test dataset don't represent a realistic species composition of the vegetation types described here. We collated species # data from our personal datasets and shuffled them into the columns of the species matrix. For example, you mind find that species common in Semideciduous forest (SEMI) might instead be listed amongst Rain Forest (OMB) species.

Better NMDS graph: distinction between vegetation types (as in the following example: ssm, as, fo). You must to use 2 matrix files, one with species and another one with classification in vegetation types (e.g. if you just want to check species distribution between types) or environmental variables (e.g. soil: ph, Al...). In this example we just want to check the species distribution among vegetation types. Thus, you need the species matrix file (here it is the object "matrix") and another one with category (here it is "matrix4"). Each row number of "matrix4" corresponds to the same row number in "matrix". Therefore both matrices must have the same sequence and number of rows.

Note 1: again all of the these 3 matrices must have the same sequence and number of rows. Within each row you classify the soil variable value and element, or in case of vegetation the category.

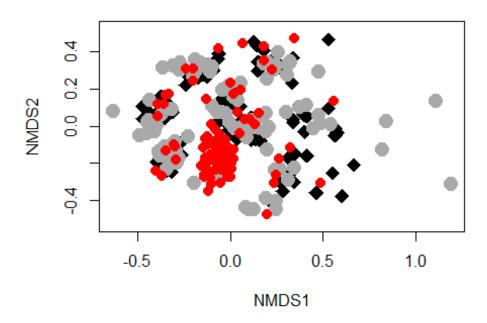
Better Graph (separation among types: OMB, GAL, SEMI):

```
matrix<- read.table("matrixspp.txt", header=T, sep="\t")</pre>
matrix[1:5,1:4] # shows only part of the data
##
     abarema brachystachya abarema villosa acanthocladus pulcherrimus
## 1
## 2
                          0
                                            0
                                                                         0
## 3
                          0
                                            0
                                                                         0
## 4
                          0
                                            0
                                                                         0
## 5
     alchornea_glandulosa
##
## 1
## 2
                         0
## 3
                         0
## 4
                         0
## 5
matrix5<- read.table("matrixtype.txt", header=T, sep="\t")</pre>
head(matrix5) # shows by default only the first 6 rows of data
##
     type codigos
## 1 OMBR
               OMB
## 2 OMBR
               OMB
```

```
## 3 OMBR
              OMB
## 4 OMBR
              OMB
## 5 OMBR
              OMB
## 6 OMBR
              OMB
forest.nmds <- metaMDS(matrix, distance="bray")</pre>
## Wisconsin double standardization
## Run 0 stress 0.2198643
## Run 1 stress 0.2192034
## ... New best solution
## ... Procrustes: rmse 0.04259014 max resid 0.1203069
## Run 2 stress 0.2190073
## ... New best solution
## ... Procrustes: rmse 0.005225512 max resid 0.05012064
## Run 3 stress 0.2214929
## Run 4 stress 0.2188155
## ... New best solution
## ... Procrustes: rmse 0.003405314 max resid 0.04596126
## Run 5 stress 0.2198851
## Run 6 stress 0.2317977
## Run 7 stress 0.2196541
## Run 8 stress 0.2205652
## Run 9 stress 0.2199014
## Run 10 stress 0.2194214
## Run 11 stress 0.219893
## Run 12 stress 0.2193951
## Run 13 stress 0.2198767
## Run 14 stress 0.2185807
## ... New best solution
## ... Procrustes: rmse 0.01736558 max resid 0.07833819
## Run 15 stress 0.2214877
## Run 16 stress 0.2206233
## Run 17 stress 0.2282496
## Run 18 stress 0.2189244
## ... Procrustes: rmse 0.01710657 max resid 0.07930599
## Run 19 stress 0.2199584
## Run 20 stress 0.2196082
## *** No convergence -- monoMDS stopping criteria:
##
        1: no. of iterations >= maxit
       19: stress ratio > sratmax
grupo<- matrix5$codigos</pre>
grupo.nivel <- levels(grupo)</pre>
head(grupo) # shows by default only the first 6 rows of data
## [1] OMB OMB OMB OMB OMB
## Levels: GAL OMB SEMI
head(grupo.nivel) # shows by default only the first 6 rows of data
```

```
## [1] "GAL" "OMB" "SEMI"
escores.nmds <- scores(forest.nmds)</pre>
head(escores.nmds, 10) # shows only the scores of the first 10 rows
##
            NMDS1
                        NMDS2
## 1 -0.43338491 0.06702318
## 2 0.16152959 -0.07929433
## 3 -0.14601269 0.30380524
## 4 0.12447163 0.45757042
## 5 -0.05114155 0.13083438
## 6 0.34695833 -0.14847638
## 7 -0.32401926 -0.13951549
## 8 0.41282420 0.05414265
## 9 -0.47627775 0.10440796
## 10 0.03482718 -0.07052191
forest.nmds$stress
## [1] 0.2185807
p <- ordiplot(escores.nmds, type="n", main="Vegetation Types")</pre>
## species scores not available
grupo.nivel
## [1] "GAL" "OMB" "SEMI"
points(escores.nmds[grupo=="OMB",], pch=(18), cex=2, col="black")
points(escores.nmds[grupo=="GAL",], pch=(19), cex=2, col="darkgrey")
points(escores.nmds[grupo=="SEMI",], pch=(20), cex=2, col="red")
```

Vegetation Types



Analysis of similarities (ANOSIM)

Basic template by "vegan"

The two matrices used here are the same as those used previously in NMDS analysis

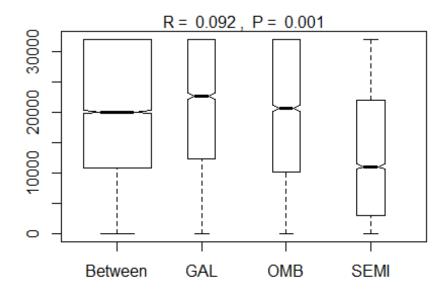
```
# usage:
library(vegan)
# Data
matrix<- read.table("matrixspp.txt", header=T, sep="\t")</pre>
matrix[1:5,1:4] # shows only part of the data
     abarema_brachystachya abarema_villosa acanthocladus_pulcherrimus
##
## 1
## 2
                          0
                                            0
                                                                         0
## 3
                          0
                                            0
                                                                         0
## 4
                          0
                                            0
                                                                         0
## 5
     alchornea_glandulosa
##
## 1
## 2
                         0
## 3
                         0
```

```
## 4
                         0
## 5
                         0
matrix5<- read.table("matrixtype.txt", header=T, sep="\t")</pre>
head(matrix5) # shows by default only the first 6 rows of data
##
     type codigos
## 1 OMBR
               OMB
## 2 OMBR
               OMB
## 3 OMBR
               OMB
## 4 OMBR
               OMB
## 5 OMBR
               OMB
## 6 OMBR
               OMB
```

Analysis-ANOSIM matrix[1:5,1:4] # shows only part of the data abarema_brachystachya abarema_villosa acanthocladus_pulcherrimus ## ## 1 ## 2 0 0 0 ## 3 0 0 0 ## 4 0 0 0 ## 5 alchornea_glandulosa ## 1 ## 2 0 ## 3 0 ## 4 0 ## 5 0 head(matrix5) # shows by default only the first 6 rows of data ## type codigos ## 1 OMBR OMB ## 2 OMBR OMB ## 3 OMBR **OMB** ## 4 OMBR **OMB** ## 5 OMBR **OMB** ## 6 OMBR **OMB** attach(matrix5) forest.dist <- vegdist(matrix, "bray")</pre> forest.ano <- anosim(matrix, matrix5\$codigo)</pre> summary(forest.ano) ## ## Call: ## anosim(x = matrix, grouping = matrix5\$codigo) ## Dissimilarity: bray

##

```
## ANOSIM statistic R: 0.09155
##
         Significance: 0.001
##
## Permutation: free
## Number of permutations: 999
##
## Upper quantiles of permutations (null model):
                     97.5%
##
       90%
               95%
                               99%
## 0.00741 0.01019 0.01246 0.01541
##
## Dissimilarity ranks between and within classes:
           0%
                  25%
                        50%
                                75% 100%
## Between 3 10782.0 20070 32024.0 32024 26133
            4 12251.5 22714 32024.0 32024 4278
## GAL
## OMB
            2 10176.5 20662 32024.0 32024
                                           4278
            1 3031.5 11048 22024.5 32024 4371
## SEMI
plot(forest.ano)
```



```
forest.nmds$stress
## [1] 0.2185807
```

The graph described in NMDS analysis can also be used to illustrate the result of ANOSIM.

Important: This ANOSIM using R just provides the Global R statistics and p-value, i.e. whether there are differences or not. If you need to know between which pairs

there are significant differences, the most pratical and acessible way is to do ANOSIM in the "PAST" software. To do this you insert the names of the categories in the first column (grey), which corresponds to the rows, and the species' names in the horizontal grey row, which corresponds to the columns. Your columns will contain the species' names. In the rest of the cells are filled with the species abundance data per plot. The last step is to mark the first column with type names in different colors. Just go in edit and you'll find how to insert different colors to specific lines. "Past" requires at least 2 different color groups to be defined. Lastly, just click on "Multivariatve" and select "ANOSIM-One way". The output will return the Global and the pairwise values.

CCA (Canonical Correspondence Analysis)

CCA, also referred as constrained correspondence analysis, is one of the most commonly used multivariate analyses to model and to test effects of environmental variables (e.g. soil properties (ph, N, P, K etc) on species composition of plant communities.

```
# install.packages("vegan")
library(vegan)
# Usage:
# Species matrix
matrix<- read.table("matrixspp.txt", header=T, sep="\t")</pre>
matrix[1:5,1:4] # shows only part of the data
##
     abarema brachystachya abarema villosa acanthocladus pulcherrimus
## 1
## 2
                          0
                                           0
                                                                        0
## 3
                          0
                                           0
                                                                        0
                          0
                                           0
## 4
                                                                        0
## 5
##
     alchornea_glandulosa
## 1
## 2
## 3
                         0
## 4
                         0
## 5
# Environmental matrix
env<- read.table("matrixenv.txt", header=T, sep="\t")</pre>
head(env)
      pH P K Ca Mg Al
##
## 1 4.5 4 39 0.1 0.1 2.6
## 2 4.5 4 45 0.1 0.1 3.3
```

```
## 3 4.4 3 39 0.2 0.1 3.2
## 4 4.2 4 44 0.2 0.1 2.2
## 5 4.0 5 36 0.2 0.1 4.1
## 6 4.3 4 28 0.1 0.1 2.1
forest.cca <- cca(matrix ~ pH + P + K + Ca + Mg + Al, env, na.action =
na.fail)
forest.cca
## Call: cca(formula = matrix ~ pH + P + K + Ca + Mg + Al, data =
## env, na.action = na.fail)
##
##
                  Inertia Proportion Rank
## Total
                 26.84694
                              1.00000
## Constrained
                  0.57015
                              0.02124
                                          6
## Unconstrained 26.27679
                              0.97876
                                       273
## Inertia is scaled Chi-square
## 73 species (variables) deleted due to missingness
##
## Eigenvalues for constrained axes:
      CCA1
              CCA2
                       CCA3
                               CCA4
                                        CCA5
                                                CCA<sub>6</sub>
## 0.13345 0.10707 0.09487 0.08878 0.07677 0.06921
##
## Eigenvalues for unconstrained axes:
                     CA<sub>3</sub>
                            CA4
                                                         CA8
##
      CA1
             CA2
                                   CA5
                                           CA6
                                                  CA7
## 0.7949 0.7109 0.6902 0.6704 0.6100 0.5536 0.5123 0.5007
## (Showing 8 of 273 unconstrained eigenvalues)
anova(forest.cca, by="margin")
## Permutation test for cca under reduced model
## Marginal effects of terms
## Permutation: free
## Number of permutations: 999
## Model: cca(formula = matrix \sim pH + P + K + Ca + Mg + Al, data = env,
na.action = na.fail)
##
             Df ChiSquare
                                F Pr(>F)
              1
                   0.1070 1.1121 0.178
## pH
## P
              1
                   0.1046 1.0862 0.262
## K
              1
                   0.1015 1.0546
                                   0.325
## Ca
              1
                   0.0974 1.0120 0.432
## Mg
              1
                   0.0815 0.8467 0.799
## Al
              1
                   0.1020 1.0597 0.316
## Residual 273
                  26.2768
summary<- summary(forest.cca) # scores of CCA</pre>
head(summary) # shows by default only the first 6 rows of the scores
##
## Call:
```

```
## cca(formula = matrix ~ pH + P + K + Ca + Mg + Al, data = env,
na.action = na.fail)
## Partitioning of scaled Chi-square:
                 Inertia Proportion
##
## Total
                 26.8469
                            1.00000
## Constrained
                  0.5702
                            0.02124
## Unconstrained 26.2768
                            0.97876
## Eigenvalues, and their contribution to the scaled Chi-square
##
## Importance of components:
##
                             CCA1
                                       CCA2
                                                CCA3
                                                         CCA4
                                                                  CCA5
                         0.133454 0.107067 0.094870 0.088783 0.076768
## Eigenvalue
## Proportion Explained 0.004971 0.003988 0.003534 0.003307 0.002859
## Cumulative Proportion 0.004971 0.008959 0.012493 0.015800 0.018659
##
                             CCA6
                                       CA1
                                               CA2
                                                       CA<sub>3</sub>
                                                               CA4
                                                                       CA5
## Eigenvalue
                         0.069211 0.79491 0.71093 0.69017 0.67039 0.61000
## Proportion Explained 0.002578 0.02961 0.02648 0.02571 0.02497 0.02272
## Cumulative Proportion 0.021237 0.05085 0.07733 0.10303 0.12801 0.15073
                             CA6
                                      CA7
                                              CA8
                                                      CA9
                                                             CA10
## Eigenvalue
                         0.55365 0.51231 0.50066 0.43055 0.37484 0.35749
## Proportion Explained 0.02062 0.01908 0.01865 0.01604 0.01396 0.01332
## Cumulative Proportion 0.17135 0.19043 0.20908 0.22512 0.23908 0.25240
##
                            CA12
                                     CA13
                                             CA14
                                                     CA15
                                                             CA16
                                                                     CA17
                         0.33137 0.31731 0.31476 0.29647 0.29313 0.28059
## Eigenvalue
## Proportion Explained 0.01234 0.01182 0.01172 0.01104 0.01092 0.01045
## Cumulative Proportion 0.26474 0.27656 0.28828 0.29932 0.31024 0.32069
##
                            CA18
                                      CA19
                                               CA20
                                                        CA21
                                                                 CA22
CA23
                         0.27204 0.264399 0.257427 0.253720 0.247108
## Eigenvalue
0.243790
## Proportion Explained 0.01013 0.009848 0.009589 0.009451 0.009204
## Cumulative Proportion 0.33083 0.340676 0.350265 0.359715 0.368920
0.378000
##
                             CA24
                                       CA25
                                                CA26
                                                        CA27
                                                                 CA28
CA29
                         0.243745 0.240429 0.229699 0.22041 0.216962
## Eigenvalue
0.215906
## Proportion Explained 0.009079 0.008956 0.008556 0.00821 0.008081
0.008042
## Cumulative Proportion 0.387079 0.396035 0.404591 0.41280 0.420882
0.428924
##
                             CA30
                                       CA31
                                               CA32
                                                       CA33
                                                                CA34
CA35
                        0.212313 0.211601 0.21100 0.20539 0.202015
## Eigenvalue
0.200763
## Proportion Explained 0.007908 0.007882 0.00786 0.00765 0.007525
0.007478
```

```
## Cumulative Proportion 0.436833 0.444714 0.45257 0.46022 0.467749
0.475227
                             CA36
                                      CA37
##
                                                CA38
                                                        CA39
                                                                 CA40
CA41
                         0.197002 0.193546 0.191625 0.19034 0.183262
## Eigenvalue
0.180381
## Proportion Explained 0.007338 0.007209 0.007138 0.00709 0.006826
0.006719
## Cumulative Proportion 0.482565 0.489774 0.496912 0.50400 0.510828
0.517547
##
                             CA42
                                       CA43
                                                CA44
                                                         CA45
## Eigenvalue
                         0.179151 0.178841 0.172691 0.171183 0.168806
## Proportion Explained 0.006673 0.006661 0.006432 0.006376 0.006288
## Cumulative Proportion 0.524220 0.530881 0.537314 0.543690 0.549978
##
                             CA47
                                      CA48
                                                CA49
                                                         CA50
                                                                  CA51
## Eigenvalue
                         0.166302 0.164254 0.163920 0.162202 0.159697
## Proportion Explained 0.006194 0.006118 0.006106 0.006042 0.005948
## Cumulative Proportion 0.556172 0.562290 0.568396 0.574438 0.580386
##
                             CA52
                                      CA53
                                                CA54
                                                         CA55
## Eigenvalue
                         0.158880 0.156539 0.152281 0.151755 0.150853
## Proportion Explained 0.005918 0.005831 0.005672 0.005653 0.005619
## Cumulative Proportion 0.586304 0.592135 0.597807 0.603460 0.609079
##
                             CA57
                                       CA58
                                                CA59
                                                         CA60
                                                                  CA61
                         0.148587 0.145735 0.144786 0.144191 0.142750
## Eigenvalue
## Proportion Explained 0.005535 0.005428 0.005393 0.005371 0.005317
## Cumulative Proportion 0.614613 0.620042 0.625435 0.630806 0.636123
##
                             CA62
                                       CA63
                                                CA64
                                                         CA65
                                                                  CA66
## Eigenvalue
                         0.141302 0.140067 0.139000 0.136403 0.135129
## Proportion Explained 0.005263 0.005217 0.005177 0.005081 0.005033
## Cumulative Proportion 0.641386 0.646603 0.651781 0.656862 0.661895
                                      CA68
##
                             CA67
                                                CA69
                                                         CA70
                                                                  CA71
## Eigenvalue
                         0.131766 0.130343 0.129344 0.127076 0.126107
## Proportion Explained
                         0.004908 0.004855 0.004818 0.004733 0.004697
## Cumulative Proportion 0.666803 0.671658 0.676476 0.681209 0.685906
##
                                       CA73
                                                CA74
                                                         CA75
                             CA72
                                                                 CA76
CA77
                         0.124247 0.123811 0.122370 0.119772 0.11758
## Eigenvalue
0.11705
## Proportion Explained 0.004628 0.004612 0.004558 0.004461 0.00438
## Cumulative Proportion 0.690534 0.695146 0.699704 0.704165 0.70854
0.71290
##
                             CA78
                                       CA79
                                                CA80
                                                         CA81
                                                                  CA82
## Eigenvalue
                         0.115508 0.114218 0.112989 0.110408 0.109197
## Proportion Explained 0.004302 0.004254 0.004209 0.004113 0.004067
## Cumulative Proportion 0.717207 0.721462 0.725670 0.729783 0.733850
##
                             CA83
                                                CA85
                                      CA84
                                                         CA86
## Eigenvalue
                         0.108409 0.108173 0.105441 0.104595 0.102905
## Proportion Explained 0.004038 0.004029 0.003927 0.003896 0.003833
## Cumulative Proportion 0.737888 0.741918 0.745845 0.749741 0.753574
```

```
##
                             CA88
                                      CA89
                                               CA90
                                                        CA91
                                                                 CA92
## Eigenvalue
                         0.101358 0.100752 0.100439 0.100086 0.097841
## Proportion Explained 0.003775 0.003753 0.003741 0.003728 0.003644
## Cumulative Proportion 0.757349 0.761102 0.764843 0.768571 0.772216
##
                             CA93
                                      CA94
                                               CA95
                                                       CA96
                                                                CA97
CA98
## Eigenvalue
                         0.096959 0.096093 0.094704 0.09368 0.092814
0.092428
## Proportion Explained 0.003612 0.003579 0.003528 0.00349 0.003457
0.003443
## Cumulative Proportion 0.775827 0.779407 0.782934 0.78642 0.789881
0.793324
##
                             CA99
                                     CA100
                                              CA101
                                                       CA102
                                                                CA103
## Eigenvalue
                         0.091093 0.089654 0.089457 0.087943 0.086575
## Proportion Explained
                         0.003393 0.003339 0.003332 0.003276 0.003225
## Cumulative Proportion 0.796717 0.800056 0.803388 0.806664 0.809889
##
                            CA104
                                     CA105
                                              CA106
                                                       CA107
                                                                CA108
## Eigenvalue
                         0.085801 0.085266 0.084390 0.083684 0.083050
## Proportion Explained
                         0.003196 0.003176 0.003143 0.003117 0.003093
## Cumulative Proportion 0.813085 0.816261 0.819404 0.822521 0.825615
                            CA109
                                     CA110
                                              CA111
                                                       CA112
## Eigenvalue
                         0.082650 0.081223 0.080599 0.079815 0.078284
## Proportion Explained
                         0.003079 0.003025 0.003002 0.002973 0.002916
## Cumulative Proportion 0.828693 0.831719 0.834721 0.837694 0.840610
##
                            CA114
                                     CA115
                                              CA116
                                                       CA117
                                                               CA118
CA119
## Eigenvalue
                         0.077683 0.077200 0.076070 0.075753 0.07330
0.072731
## Proportion Explained 0.002894 0.002876 0.002833 0.002822 0.00273
## Cumulative Proportion 0.843503 0.846379 0.849212 0.852034 0.85476
0.857473
##
                            CA120
                                     CA121
                                              CA122
                                                      CA123
                                                               CA124
CA125
## Eigenvalue
                         0.071921 0.071254 0.069834 0.06928 0.068163
0.067691
## Proportion Explained 0.002679 0.002654 0.002601 0.00258 0.002539
0.002521
## Cumulative Proportion 0.860152 0.862806 0.865407 0.86799 0.870527
0.873048
##
                            CA126
                                     CA127
                                              CA128
                                                       CA129
                                                                CA130
## Eigenvalue
                         0.066292 0.065208 0.064862 0.064022 0.063521
## Proportion Explained 0.002469 0.002429 0.002416 0.002385 0.002366
## Cumulative Proportion 0.875517 0.877946 0.880362 0.882747 0.885113
##
                            CA131
                                     CA132
                                              CA133
                                                       CA134
## Eigenvalue
                         0.062631 0.061629 0.060607 0.059574 0.058172
## Proportion Explained 0.002333 0.002296 0.002258 0.002219 0.002167
## Cumulative Proportion 0.887446 0.889742 0.891999 0.894218 0.896385
                                              CA138
##
                            CA136
                                     CA137
                                                       CA139
                                                                CA140
## Eigenvalue
                         0.057939 0.057631 0.056849 0.056001 0.054700
```

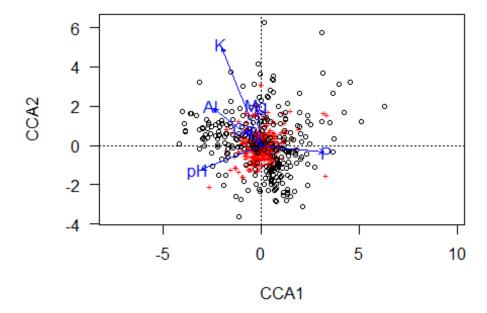
```
## Proportion Explained 0.002158 0.002147 0.002118 0.002086 0.002037
## Cumulative Proportion 0.898543 0.900690 0.902807 0.904893 0.906931
                            CA141
                                     CA142
                                              CA143
                                                       CA144
## Eigenvalue
                         0.053797 0.052781 0.052687 0.052129 0.050532
## Proportion Explained
                         0.002004 0.001966 0.001962 0.001942 0.001882
## Cumulative Proportion 0.908934 0.910900 0.912863 0.914805 0.916687
##
                            CA146
                                     CA147
                                              CA148
                                                       CA149
                                                                 CA150
## Eigenvalue
                         0.050143 0.049893 0.048909 0.047714 0.046742
## Proportion Explained 0.001868 0.001858 0.001822 0.001777 0.001741
## Cumulative Proportion 0.918555 0.920413 0.922235 0.924012 0.925753
##
                            CA151
                                    CA152
                                             CA153
                                                      CA154
                                                                CA155
CA156
## Eigenvalue
                         0.046119 0.04590 0.044665 0.044152 0.043621
0.043195
## Proportion Explained 0.001718 0.00171 0.001664 0.001645 0.001625
0.001609
## Cumulative Proportion 0.927471 0.92918 0.930844 0.932489 0.934114
0.935722
##
                            CA157
                                     CA158
                                              CA159
                                                       CA160
## Eigenvalue
                         0.042589 0.040889 0.040483 0.039867 0.039142
## Proportion Explained 0.001586 0.001523 0.001508 0.001485 0.001458
## Cumulative Proportion 0.937309 0.938832 0.940340 0.941825 0.943283
##
                            CA162
                                     CA163
                                              CA164
                                                       CA165
                                                                CA166
                         0.038772 0.038209 0.036714 0.036433 0.035424
## Eigenvalue
## Proportion Explained 0.001444 0.001423 0.001368 0.001357 0.001319
## Cumulative Proportion 0.944727 0.946150 0.947518 0.948875 0.950194
##
                            CA167
                                     CA168
                                             CA169
                                                      CA170
                                                                CA171
CA172
## Eigenvalue
                        0.034841 0.034034 0.03357 0.032810 0.032202
0.031659
## Proportion Explained 0.001298 0.001268 0.00125 0.001222 0.001199
0.001179
## Cumulative Proportion 0.951492 0.952760 0.95401 0.955232 0.956432
0.957611
##
                            CA173
                                     CA174
                                              CA175
                                                      CA176
                                                                CA177
CA178
                        0.031358 0.030700 0.030271 0.03008 0.028924
## Eigenvalue
0.028624
## Proportion Explained 0.001168 0.001144 0.001128 0.00112 0.001077
0.001066
## Cumulative Proportion 0.958779 0.959923 0.961050 0.96217 0.963248
0.964314
##
                            CA179
                                     CA180
                                             CA181
                                                       CA182
                                                                CA183
## Eigenvalue
                         0.027961 0.027319 0.02710 0.0262734 0.026229
## Proportion Explained 0.001041 0.001018 0.00101 0.0009786 0.000977
## Cumulative Proportion 0.965355 0.966373 0.96738 0.9683612 0.969338
##
                             CA184
                                               CA186
                                       CA185
                                                         CA187
## Eigenvalue
                         0.0255123 0.0247811 0.02443 0.0240143 0.0238019
## Proportion Explained 0.0009503 0.0009231 0.00091 0.0008945 0.0008866
## Cumulative Proportion 0.9702885 0.9712116 0.97212 0.9730160 0.9739026
```

| ## CA193 | | CA189 | CA190 | CA191 | CA192 | |
|----------------------------|------------|-----------|-----------|-----------|-----------|--|
| ## Eigenvalue 0.0208438 | | 0.0231740 | 0.0222444 | 0.0218978 | 0.0213761 | |
| ## Proportion 0.0007764 | Explained | 0.0008632 | 0.0008286 | 0.0008157 | 0.0007962 | |
| ## Cumulative | Proportion | 0.9747658 | 0.9755944 | 0.9764100 | 0.9772062 | |
| 0.9779826 ## | | CA194 | CA195 | CA196 | CA197 | |
| CA198 ## Eigenvalue | | 0.0204801 | 0.0203209 | 0.0195663 | 0.0193642 | |
| 0.0192158 ## Proportion | Explained | 0.0007628 | 0.0007569 | 0.0007288 | 0.0007213 | |
| 0.0007158 ## Cumulative | Proportion | 0.9787455 | 0.9795024 | 0.9802312 | 0.9809525 | |
| 0.9816682 ## | | CA199 | CA200 | CA201 | CA202 | |
| CA203 ## Eigenvalue | | 0.0182656 | 0.0180880 | 0.0170441 | 0.0167410 | |
| 0.0161192 ## Proportion | Explained | 0.0006804 | 0.0006737 | 0.0006349 | 0.0006236 | |
| 0.0006004 ## Cumulative | Proportion | 0.9823486 | 0.9830223 | 0.9836572 | 0.9842808 | |
| 0.9848812 ## | | CA204 | CA205 | CA206 | CA207 | |
| CA208 ## Eigenvalue | | 0.0160310 | 0.0155517 | 0.0149094 | 0.0142466 | |
| 0.0141906 ## Proportion | Explained | 0.0005971 | 0.0005793 | 0.0005553 | 0.0005307 | |
| 0.0005286 ## Cumulative | · | | | | | |
| 0.9876722 ## | | CA209 | CA210 | CA211 | CA212 | |
| CA213 | | | | | | |
| ## Eigenvalue 0.0123308 | | 0.0137521 | 0.0135397 | 0.0131839 | 0.0125312 | |
| ## Proportion 0.0004593 | Explained | 0.0005122 | 0.0005043 | 0.0004911 | 0.0004668 | |
| ## Cumulative 0.9901059 | Proportion | 0.9881844 | 0.9886888 | 0.9891798 | 0.9896466 | |
| ## CA218 | | CA214 | CA215 | CA216 | CA217 | |
| ## Eigenvalue 0.0109782 | | 0.0119986 | 0.0118160 | 0.0112397 | 0.0110831 | |
| ## Proportion 0.0004089 | Explained | 0.0004469 | 0.0004401 | 0.0004187 | 0.0004128 | |
| ## Cumulative 0.9922333 | Proportion | 0.9905528 | 0.9909929 | 0.9914116 | 0.9918244 | |
| ## CA223 | | CA219 | CA220 | CA221 | CA222 | |
| CALLI | | | | | | |

```
## Eigenvalue
                         0.0105488 0.0100077 0.0096448 0.0092001
0.0089624
## Proportion Explained 0.0003929 0.0003728 0.0003593 0.0003427
0.0003338
## Cumulative Proportion 0.9926263 0.9929990 0.9933583 0.9937010
0.9940348
##
                             CA224
                                       CA225
                                                CA226
                                                          CA227
                                                                    CA228
## Eigenvalue
                         0.0089161 0.0086083 0.008053 0.0077037 0.0074697
## Proportion Explained 0.0003321 0.0003206 0.000300 0.0002869 0.0002782
## Cumulative Proportion 0.9943669 0.9946876 0.994988 0.9952745 0.9955527
##
                             CA229
                                       CA230
                                                 CA231
                                                           CA232
CA233
## Eigenvalue
                         0.0072798 0.0071658 0.0066610 0.0062860
0.0058629
## Proportion Explained 0.0002712 0.0002669 0.0002481 0.0002341
0.0002184
## Cumulative Proportion 0.9958239 0.9960908 0.9963389 0.9965730
0.9967914
##
                            CA234
                                      CA235
                                                CA236
                                                          CA237
## Eigenvalue
                         0.005692 0.0056442 0.0052689 0.0050255 0.004779
## Proportion Explained 0.000212 0.0002102 0.0001963 0.0001872 0.000178
## Cumulative Proportion 0.997003 0.9972137 0.9974099 0.9975971 0.997775
##
                             CA239
                                      CA240
                                               CA241
                                                         CA242
                                                                   CA243
## Eigenvalue
                         0.0046528 0.004536 0.004027 0.0035879 0.0034546
## Proportion Explained 0.0001733 0.000169 0.000150 0.0001336 0.0001287
## Cumulative Proportion 0.9979484 0.998117 0.998267 0.9984010 0.9985297
##
                             CA244
                                      CA245
                                                CA246
                                                          CA247
## Eigenvalue
                         0.0032627 0.003034 0.0028833 0.0027852 2.587e-03
## Proportion Explained 0.0001215 0.000113 0.0001074 0.0001037 9.638e-05
## Cumulative Proportion 0.9986512 0.998764 0.9988716 0.9989754 9.991e-01
##
                             CA249
                                       CA250
                                                 CA251
                                                           CA252
CA253
## Eigenvalue
                     2.432e-03 2.309e-03 2.199e-03 2.057e-03 1.994e-
03
## Proportion Explained 9.057e-05 8.602e-05 8.192e-05 7.662e-05 7.426e-
## Cumulative Proportion 9.992e-01 9.992e-01 9.993e-01 9.994e-01 9.995e-
01
##
                             CA254
                                       CA255
                                                 CA256
                                                           CA257
CA258
## Eigenvalue
                        0.0017532 1.531e-03 1.333e-03 1.243e-03
0.0010927
## Proportion Explained 0.0000653 5.702e-05 4.964e-05 4.629e-05
0.0000407
## Cumulative Proportion 0.9995465 9.996e-01 9.997e-01 9.997e-01
0.9997401
##
                             CA259
                                       CA260
                                                 CA261
                                                           CA262
CA263
## Eigenvalue
                        1.016e-03 9.462e-04 8.598e-04 8.044e-04 6.902e-
04
```

```
## Proportion Explained 3.784e-05 3.524e-05 3.203e-05 2.996e-05 2.571e-
05
## Cumulative Proportion 9.998e-01 9.998e-01 9.998e-01 9.999e-01 9.999e-
##
                                      CA265
                                                CA266
                            CA264
                                                          CA267
CA268
                       6.058e-04 4.842e-04 3.749e-04 2.771e-04 2.547e-
## Eigenvalue
## Proportion Explained 2.257e-05 1.804e-05 1.396e-05 1.032e-05 9.485e-
06
## Cumulative Proportion 9.999e-01 9.999e-01 1.000e+00 1.000e+00
1.000e+00
##
                            CA269
                                      CA270
                                                CA271
                                                          CA272
CA273
                  2.293e-04 1.765e-04 1.570e-04 7.871e-05 2.199e-
## Eigenvalue
## Proportion Explained 8.541e-06 6.574e-06 5.849e-06 2.932e-06 8.190e-
## Cumulative Proportion 1.000e+00 1.000e+00 1.000e+00 1.000e+00
1.000e+00
## Accumulated constrained eigenvalues
## Importance of components:
                          CCA1 CCA2
                                         CCA3
                                                 CCA4
                                                         CCA5
                                                                 CCA6
##
## Eigenvalue
                        0.1335 0.1071 0.09487 0.08878 0.07677 0.06921
## Proportion Explained 0.2341 0.1878 0.16639 0.15572 0.13464 0.12139
## Cumulative Proportion 0.2341 0.4219 0.58825 0.74397 0.87861 1.00000
##
## Scaling 2 for species and site scores
## * Species are scaled proportional to eigenvalues
## * Sites are unscaled: weighted dispersion equal on all dimensions
##
##
## Species scores
##
##
                                 CCA1
                                          CCA2
                                                   CCA3
                                                            CCA4
CCA5
## abarema brachystachya
                             -0.08600 0.74307 -0.05159 0.91193
0.05159
                             -0.15080 1.70220 -0.98401 -1.92075 -
## abarema villosa
1.03712
## acanthocladus_pulcherrimus 1.21131 0.22509 -0.50765 0.64935
0.01608
## alchornea_glandulosa
                             -0.91166 -0.24970 -0.07451 0.07332 -
0.26944
                             0.32728 -0.45372 -0.11631 -0.28745
## alibertia concolor
0.42483
## alibertia edulis
                              0.01383 0.05318 0.17868 0.25923
0.04599
## ....
```

```
##
                                   CCA6
## abarema_brachystachya
                              -0.113733
## abarema_villosa
                              -0.675995
## acanthocladus_pulcherrimus 1.273453
## alchornea glandulosa
                              -0.001909
## alibertia concolor
                              -0.449355
## alibertia edulis
                              -0.012734
## ....
##
##
## Site scores (weighted averages of species scores)
##
##
            CCA1
                    CCA2
                            CCA3
                                    CCA4
                                            CCA5
                                                    CCA6
## row1
        1.48951 -1.6420 -1.8624 -2.1549 -0.3991 -1.0164
## row2 -0.07990 1.1061 -1.2860 -3.2203
                                          2.5605
                                                  0.9580
## row3 2.02275 -0.7063 0.4961 -1.3433 0.8617
                                                  0.3517
## row4 6.29102 2.0096 -1.4887 -0.5053 3.8836 3.0659
## row5 0.00129 -0.1397
                         1.8836 -1.8595 1.4453
                                                  3.1196
## row6 1.38952 -0.8245 -1.4034 1.5555 0.6720 -1.1118
## ....
##
##
## Site constraints (linear combinations of constraining variables)
##
##
           CCA1
                    CCA2
                             CCA3
                                      CCA4
                                             CCA5
                                                       CCA<sub>6</sub>
        0.5722 -0.12906 -0.64977 -1.18507 0.6791 -0.021241
## row1
## row2 -0.1000 -0.02029 -0.23062 -1.51626 0.7934
                                                   0.512563
## row3 -0.5512 -0.54413 -0.03378 -0.23777 0.2450
                                                   0.631624
## row4 1.5712 0.61372 -0.46802 0.08159 0.5547 -0.227517
## row5 0.5161 -0.62360 1.33765 -0.91375 0.2887
        1.4922 -0.40025 -0.81149 -0.48078 0.3170
## row6
                                                   0.009357
## ....
##
##
## Biplot scores for constraining variables
##
##
          CCA1
                   CCA2
                            CCA3
                                     CCA4
                                              CCA5
                                                      CCA6
## pH -0.50007 -0.19882 -0.19379 -0.41096 0.06805 -0.7066
## P
       0.52640 -0.05314
                        0.65806 -0.49648
                                           0.10292 -0.1730
## K -0.32880
               0.82533
                         0.37257 -0.07746
                                           0.04001 -0.2536
               0.11749
                         0.72741 0.22325 -0.32501 -0.5362
## Ca -0.11852
               0.30274 0.07982 -0.27226 -0.89713 -0.1472
## Mg -0.03656
## Al -0.39741
               0.31070 0.40749 -0.22859 0.04560
                                                   0.7247
# ordinary plot
x11(width=12, height=12)
plot(forest.cca, las=1)
```



dev.off()

PCA (Principal Component Analysis

PCA is a method commonly used to separate variables (e.g environmental data, such as soil conditions) in ordination before submitting them to further analysis.

To execute the PCA in the example below, we use the function rda, though other functions such as prcomp or princomp can also be used to calculate PCA. It's important to correctly interpret the PCA output before trying to understand values returned by the function "PCAsignificance" and the command "PC1.exp", which are explained below. The command PC1.exp shows the percentage of explanation of each axis. In the function "PCAsignificance" the result named "percentage of variance" shows the percentage of variation explained by axis 1. You can access further information about this, and other values, by requesting R help for this function by writing: ?PCAsignificance.

The output of rda, v, contains the scores of the "species" (here: soil variables) and sites on the ordination axes. These are not the same as the correlations of variables with the axes.

```
# install.packages("vegan")

library(vegan) # rda function for PCA analysis
```

```
# Environmental matrix
env<- read.table("matrixenv.txt", header=T, sep="\t")</pre>
head(env)
##
      pH P K Ca Mg Al
## 1 4.5 4 39 0.1 0.1 2.6
## 2 4.5 4 45 0.1 0.1 3.3
## 3 4.4 3 39 0.2 0.1 3.2
## 4 4.2 4 44 0.2 0.1 2.2
## 5 4.0 5 36 0.2 0.1 4.1
## 6 4.3 4 28 0.1 0.1 2.1
# Usage:
pca.env <- rda(env, scale=TRUE) # scale = TRUE - to standardize the data
## Call: rda(X = env, scale = TRUE)
##
##
                  Inertia Rank
## Total
                        6
## Unconstrained
                        6
## Inertia is correlations
##
## Eigenvalues for unconstrained axes:
      PC1
             PC2
                     PC3
                            PC4
                                   PC5
                                           PC<sub>6</sub>
## 1.9853 1.4433 1.0506 0.7259 0.5413 0.2536
summary<- summary(pca.env)</pre>
head(summary) # shows by default only the first 6 rows of the scores
##
## Call:
## rda(X = env, scale = TRUE)
##
## Partitioning of correlations:
##
                  Inertia Proportion
## Total
                        6
                                   1
## Unconstrained
                        6
                                   1
##
## Eigenvalues, and their contribution to the correlations
##
## Importance of components:
##
                             PC1
                                    PC2
                                            PC3
                                                   PC4
                                                            PC5
                                                                    PC<sub>6</sub>
## Eigenvalue
                          1.9853 1.4433 1.0506 0.7259 0.54130 0.25355
## Proportion Explained 0.3309 0.2406 0.1751 0.1210 0.09022 0.04226
## Cumulative Proportion 0.3309 0.5714 0.7465 0.8675 0.95774 1.00000
##
## Scaling 2 for species and site scores
## * Species are scaled proportional to eigenvalues
## * Sites are unscaled: weighted dispersion equal on all dimensions
```

```
## * General scaling constant of scores: 6.396448
##
##
## Species scores
##
##
         PC1
                 PC2
                         PC3
                                   PC4
                                           PC5
                                                    PC6
## pH -0.7012 2.0436 -0.3792 0.883221
                                       1.0642 0.30809
## P -0.9181 -0.4401 2.2376 -0.225144 0.8270 -0.20217
## K -2.1470 -0.4973 -0.5432 0.972407 -0.2224 -0.81988
## Ca -2.1582 0.4553 0.6081 -0.001057 -1.0408 0.70784
## Mg -1.6190 0.1906 -0.9777 -1.712833 0.5125 -0.09719
## Al -0.5612 -2.2319 -0.6268 0.489924 0.6923 0.64071
##
##
## Site scores (weighted sums of species scores)
##
##
          PC1
                    PC2
                             PC3
                                      PC4
                                              PC5
                                                      PC6
## sit1 0.2332 0.089598 0.17463
                                 0.08095
                                          0.4550 -0.2855
## sit2 0.1368 -0.145176 0.06386
                                  0.24593 0.6126 -0.1015
## sit3 0.1862 -0.107166 -0.08787
                                  0.13652 0.1706 0.2740
## sit4 0.1762 0.005016 0.30162 -0.10225 -0.1222 -0.5942
## sit5 0.1254 -0.741146 0.40371 -0.10187
                                          0.3741 0.3728
## sit6 0.4021 0.131917
                         0.32129 -0.24087 0.1643 -0.3517
## ....
```

If you want to test for the signifiance of PCA, you can either use the function PCAsignificance of the package BiodiversityR (e.g. PCAsignificance(pca.env, axes=6)) or to compute an anova under a rda.

```
(av <- pca.env$CA$eig) # av - inspects the eigenvalues. The sum of
eigenvalues
##
                    PC2
                              PC3
                                         PC4
                                                   PC5
                                                              PC<sub>6</sub>
## 1.9852662 1.4433273 1.0506311 0.7259281 0.5412958 0.2535515
                        # represent the total percentage of explanation
assigned
                        # to each axis.
                        # pca.env$CA$":Relationship of each environmental
variable
                        # with the axes. The closer the result is to 1, the
Larger
                        # the association with the positive or negative
axis, respectively.
sum.av <- sum(av)</pre>
PC1.exp <- 100*(av[1]/sum(av)) # calculate the percentage of explanation
of
PC1.exp
                                 # each axis. Here it shows the percentage
of the
```

```
## PC1
## 33.08777

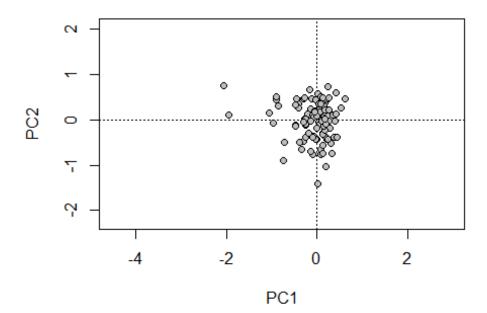
round(PC1.exp, 2) # You can choose how many decimals after the point you
would

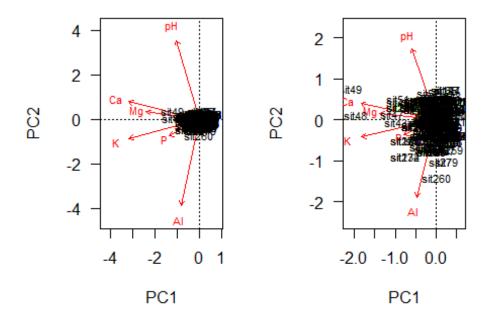
## PC1
## 33.09

# like to keep. Here it is 2.

# Simple gragh

x11(width=12, height=12)
plot(pca.env, type="n")
points(pca.env, display = "sites", col=1, pch=21, cex=1, bg="grey")
```



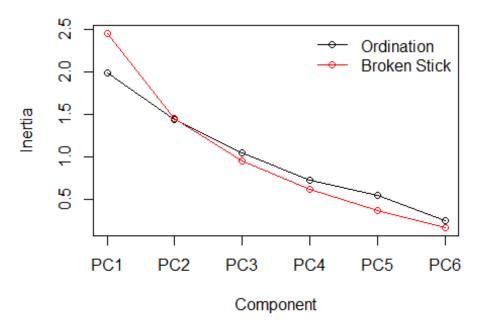


```
# eigenvalues
# dev.off()

# Screeplots - select axes with values from the ordination that are
larger
# than the expected value under the Broken stick criteria.

screeplot(pca.env, bstick = TRUE, type = "lines")
```





Analysis of Indicator Species (INDVAL)

The association index named IndVal computed with the function "multipatt" of the package "indicspecies" is generated by combinations of the input clusters and comparison of each combination with the matrix species. Thus, each species receives the combination with the highest association value and the best matching patterns are tested for statistical significance of the associations. Thus this analysis is useful to indicate species that can be used to gather information about specific characteristics of habitats or environment (e.g. forest types; soil types; drought or wetter sites).

The name "type" within the command below refers to the categorical variable in the forest type matrix (matrixtype.txt). "codigos" are labels given to abbreviate forest type names: OMB = Rain (Ombrophilous) Forest; GAL = Gallery Forest and SEMI = Semideciduos forest.

```
# install.packages("indicspecies")

library(indicspecies)

# Species matrix
matrixspp<- read.table("matrixspp.txt", header=T, sep="\t")
matrixspp[1:5,1:4] # shows only part of the data

## abarema_brachystachya abarema_villosa acanthocladus_pulcherrimus
## 1 0 0 0</pre>
```

```
## 2
                           0
                                             0
                                                                           0
## 3
                           0
                                             0
                                                                           0
## 4
                           0
                                             0
                                                                           0
                                                                           0
## 5
                           0
                                             0
##
     alchornea_glandulosa
## 1
## 2
                          0
## 3
                          0
## 4
                          0
## 5
                          0
# Vegetation type
type <- read.table("matrixtype.txt", header=T)</pre>
head(type)
     type codigos
##
## 1 OMBR
               OMB
## 2 OMBR
               OMB
## 3 OMBR
               OMB
## 4 OMBR
               OMB
## 5 OMBR
               OMB
## 6 OMBR
               OMB
wetpt = multipatt(matrixspp, type$codigos) # Runs the combination
analysis
                                     # using IndVal.g as statistic
head(wetpt, 3) # shows by only the first 3 rows of the scores
## $call
## multipatt(x = matrixspp, cluster = type$codigos)
## $func
## [1] "IndVal.g"
##
## $cluster
                                OMB
                                     OMB
                                           OMB
                                                OMB
                                                      OMB
                                                           OMB
                                                                 OMB
                                                                      OMB
                                                                            OMB
##
     [1] OMB
               OMB
                    OMB
                          OMB
OMB
##
               OMB
                    OMB
                          OMB
                                OMB
                                     OMB
                                           OMB
                                                OMB
                                                      OMB
                                                           OMB
                                                                 OMB
                                                                      OMB
                                                                            OMB
    [15] OMB
OMB
##
   [29] OMB
               OMB
                    OMB
                          OMB
                                OMB
                                     OMB
                                           OMB
                                                OMB
                                                      OMB
                                                           OMB
                                                                 OMB
                                                                      OMB
                                                                            OMB
OMB
##
   [43] OMB
               OMB
                     OMB
                          OMB
                                OMB
                                     OMB
                                           OMB
                                                OMB
                                                      OMB
                                                           OMB
                                                                 OMB
                                                                      OMB
                                                                            OMB
OMB
                                     OMB
                                                                            OMB
##
    [57] OMB
               OMB
                    OMB
                          OMB
                                OMB
                                           OMB
                                                OMB
                                                      OMB
                                                           OMB
                                                                 OMB
                                                                      OMB
OMB
##
               OMB
                     OMB
                          OMB
                                OMB
                                     OMB
                                           OMB
                                                OMB
                                                      OMB
                                                           OMB
                                                                 OMB
                                                                      OMB
                                                                            OMB
    [71] OMB
OMB
##
   [85] OMB
               OMB
                    OMB
                          OMB
                                OMB
                                     OMB
                                           OMB
                                                OMB
                                                      OMB
                                                           GAL
                                                                 GAL
                                                                      GAL
                                                                            GAL
GAL
## [99] GAL
               GAL
                    GAL
                          GAL
                                GAL
                                     GAL
                                           GAL
                                                GAL
                                                      GAL
                                                           GAL
                                                                 GAL
                                                                      GAL
                                                                            GAL
GAL
```

```
## [113] GAL GAL GAL GAL GAL GAL GAL GAL GAL
                                           GAL
GAL
                  GAL GAL GAL
## [127] GAL
        GAL
            GAL
               GAL
                               GAL
                                  GAL
                                     GAL
                                        GAL
                                           GAL
GAL
               GAL
                  GAL GAL
                        GAL GAL
                              GAL
                                        GAL
                                           GAL
## [141] GAL
        GAL
            GAL
                                  GAL
                                     GAL
GAL
               GAL
                  GAL GAL
                        GAL GAL GAL
## [155] GAL GAL
            GAL
                                  GAL
                                     GAL
                                        GAL
                                            GAL
GAL
## [169] GAL GAL
           GAL
               GAL
                  GAL GAL GAL GAL
                                     GAL
                                        GAL GAL
GAL
SEMI
SEMI
SEMI
SEMI
SEMI
SEMI
## Levels: GAL OMB SEMI
summary(wetpt) # Lists those species with significant association to one
combination
##
##
  Multilevel pattern analysis
##
##
##
  Association function: IndVal.g
##
  Significance level (alpha): 0.05
##
  Total number of species: 532
##
  Selected number of species: 62
##
  Number of species associated to 1 group: 49
  Number of species associated to 2 groups: 13
##
##
##
  List of species associated to each combination:
##
##
  Group GAL #sps.
             12
##
                 stat p.value
                     0.005 **
## callisthene major
                0.360
## allagoptera_caudescens 0.302
                     0.005 **
## guazuma_ulmifolia
                     0.005 **
                0.292
## alibertia edulis
                0.280
                     0.010 **
## miconia_cabucu
                0.260
                     0.045 *
```

```
## dilodendron_bipinnatum 0.245
                                    0.010 **
                           0.239
                                    0.015 *
## protium warmingiana
## diospyros_brasiliensis 0.239
                                    0.005 **
## miconia_latecrenata
                           0.238
                                    0.010 **
                                    0.005 **
## parinari parvifolia
                           0.232
                                    0.025 *
## callisthene minor
                           0.224
                           0.207
                                    0.015 *
   psidium oblongatum
##
##
                       8
    Group OMB
               #sps.
##
                                      stat p.value
                                     0.417
                                             0.005 **
## licania kunthiana
                                             0.005 **
## phyllostemonodaphne_geminiflora 0.260
## styrax ferrugineus
                                     0.254
                                             0.010 **
                                     0.232
                                             0.025 *
## ixora gardneriana
## deguelia hatschbachii
                                     0.224
                                             0.030 *
                                             0.045 *
## virola officinalis
                                     0.223
                                     0.217
                                             0.015 *
## myrciaria_floribunda
                                     0.180
                                             0.050 *
## licania_spicata
##
##
                        29
    Group SEMI #sps.
##
                                  stat p.value
                                         0.005 **
## casearia arborea
                                 0.716
                                         0.005 **
## lacistema pubescens
                                 0.632
                                 0.630
                                         0.005 **
## matayba_elaeagnoides
                                         0.005 **
## xylopia sericea
                                 0.484
## erythroxylum_pelleterianum
                                0.469
                                         0.005 **
## xylopia_aromatica
                                 0.467
                                         0.005 **
                                         0.005 **
## miconia_calvescens
                                 0.461
## myrcia_guianensis
                                 0.461
                                         0.005 **
                                         0.005 **
## miconia_sellowiana
                                 0.442
                                         0.005 **
## pera heteranthera
                                 0.427
                                         0.005 **
## himatanthus_phagedaenicus
                                 0.425
                                         0.005 **
## sacoglottis_mattogrossensis 0.396
                                 0.395
                                         0.005 **
## stryphnodendron guianense
                                         0.005 **
## siparuna_reginae
                                 0.387
## jacaranda_macrantha
                                 0.384
                                         0.005 **
                                         0.005 **
## gomidesia_tijucensis
                                 0.372
## dalbergia_nigra
                                 0.365
                                         0.005 **
                                         0.005 **
## guarea pendula
                                 0.358
                                         0.005 **
## cryptocarya aschersoniana
                                 0.326
                                 0.315
                                         0.005 **
## vismia_martiana
                                 0.309
                                         0.010 **
## guatteria_gomeziana
## ocotea_diospyrifolia
                                 0.273
                                         0.010 **
                                         0.010 **
## handroanthus_riodocensis
                                 0.253
## duguetia lanceolata
                                 0.234
                                         0.005 **
                                         0.030 *
## hirtella racemosa
                                 0.231
                                         0.010 **
## swartzia_polyphylla
                                 0.231
                                         0.035 *
                                 0.217
## sloanea guianensis
                                         0.050 *
## alchornea_glandulosa
                                 0.210
## vitex_megapotamica
                                 0.206
                                         0.030 *
```

```
##
   Group GAL+OMB #sps.
##
                          10
##
                             stat p.value
                                    0.005 **
## myrcia_sp
                            0.502
## aspidosperma discolor
                            0.415
                                    0.030 *
## copaifera langsdorffii
                                    0.005 **
                            0.409
                                    0.040 *
## senefeldera verticillata 0.376
                                    0.005 **
## protium heptaphyllum
                            0.323
## clarisia_ilicifolia
                            0.293
                                    0.005 **
                            0.292
                                    0.030 *
## eschweilera_ovata
## terminalia glabrescens
                            0.264
                                    0.015 *
## ocotea divaricata
                            0.220
                                    0.050 *
## tabebuia serratifolia
                            0.220
                                    0.030 *
##
##
   Group GAL+SEMI #sps.
##
                     stat p.value
## miconia_albicans 0.243
                             0.04 *
##
   Group OMB+SEMI #sps.
##
                           2
##
                    stat p.value
                           0.010 **
## aniba_firmula
                   0.472
## ocotea dispersa 0.317
                           0.025 *
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
```

Permutational Analysis of variance (PERMANOVA)

PERMANOVA is a non-parametric multivariate statistical test used to compare groups of objects based on any measure of distance. Commonly this analysis is used to compare taxon in samples where the groups of samples are compared.

```
library(vegan)
library(permute)
library(lattice)
spp <- read.table("matrixspp.txt", header=T)</pre>
spp[1:5,10:13]
     allophylus racemosus alseis floribunda amaioua guianensis
##
## 1
                                                                   1
## 2
                                              0
                          0
                                                                   0
## 3
                          0
                                              0
                                                                   0
## 4
                          0
                                              0
                                                                   0
## 5
                                              0
                                                                   0
##
     amaioua intermedia
## 1
                        0
## 2
                        0
## 3
                        0
```

```
## 4
                        0
## 5
                        0
log(spp+1)->spp2
spp2[1:5,10:13]
##
     allophylus_racemosus alseis_floribunda amaioua_guianensis
## 1
                                                         0.6931472
## 2
                          0
                                              0
                                                         0.0000000
## 3
                          0
                                              0
                                                         0.0000000
## 4
                          0
                                              0
                                                         0.0000000
## 5
                                              0
                                                         0.0000000
     amaioua_intermedia
##
## 1
## 2
                        0
## 3
                        0
## 4
                        0
## 5
```

Usage:

Testing for species composition over different forest types: the name "type" within the command below is the categorical variable in the forest type matrix (matrixtype.txt). "codigos" are just labels given to abbreviate forest typenames: OMB = Rain (Ombrophilous) Forest; GAL = Gallery Forest and SEMI = Semideciduos forest.

```
type<- read.table("matrixtype.txt", header=T, sep="\t")</pre>
head(type)
##
     type codigos
              OMB
## 1 OMBR
## 2 OMBR
              OMB
## 3 OMBR
              OMB
## 4 OMBR
              OMB
## 5 OMBR
              OMB
              OMB
## 6 OMBR
adonis(spp2 ~ codigos, data=type, permutations=999) -> perma.result1
perma.result1
##
## Call:
## adonis(formula = spp2 ~ codigos, data = type, permutations = 999)
##
## Permutation: free
## Number of permutations: 999
##
## Terms added sequentially (first to last)
##
##
              Df SumsOfSqs MeanSqs F.Model
                                                  R2 Pr(>F)
                      5.283 2.64162 6.5743 0.04532 0.001 ***
## codigos
               2
```

```
## Residuals 277 111.302 0.40181 0.95468
## Total 279 116.585 1.00000
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
```

Testing for soil influence in the tree species abundance: the names in the right side of the formula regard the soil variables contained in the environmental matrix ("matrixenv.txt"). The category "types" regard the forest type (OMB, GAL and SEMI).

```
env <- read.table("matrixenv.txt", header=T)</pre>
head(env)
##
      pH P K Ca Mg Al
## 1 4.5 4 39 0.1 0.1 2.6
## 2 4.5 4 45 0.1 0.1 3.3
## 3 4.4 3 39 0.2 0.1 3.2
## 4 4.2 4 44 0.2 0.1 2.2
## 5 4.0 5 36 0.2 0.1 4.1
## 6 4.3 4 28 0.1 0.1 2.1
adonis(spp2 ~ pH + P + K + Ca + Mg + Al, data=env, permutations=999)->
perm.result
perm.result # Result to permanova pseudo-F, R2 e p.
##
## Call:
## adonis(formula = spp2 \sim pH + P + K + Ca + Mg + Al, data = env,
permutations = 999)
##
## Permutation: free
## Number of permutations: 999
##
## Terms added sequentially (first to last)
##
              Df SumsOfSqs MeanSqs F.Model
                                                 R2 Pr(>F)
##
                     0.345 0.34542 0.82775 0.00296 0.703
## pH
               1
## P
               1
                     0.540 0.54033 1.29483 0.00463 0.152
## K
               1
                     0.506 0.50551 1.21140 0.00434 0.193
## Ca
               1
                     0.377 0.37685 0.90306 0.00323 0.587
               1
                     0.294 0.29425 0.70513 0.00252 0.874
## Mg
               1
                     0.600 0.60038 1.43874 0.00515 0.076 .
## Al
## Residuals 273 113.923 0.41730
                                           0.97716
## Total
             279
                   116.585
                                           1.00000
## ---
## Signif. codes: 0 '***' 0.001 '**' 0.01 '*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
```

Highlight:

GOTELLI, N.J.; ELLISON, A.M. A Primer of Ecological Statistics. Sinauer Associates Publishers, 2004. Version in Portuguese: GOTELLI, N.J.; ELLISON, A.M. Princípios de Estatística em Ecologia. Porto Alegre: Artmed, 2011. 527 p.

CRAWLEY, M.J. The R Book: Second Edition. Chichester: Imperial College London at Silwood Park, John Wiley & Sons Ltd., 2012. 1051p.

BORCARD, D.; GILLET, F.; LEGENDRE, P. Numerical ecology with R. New York: Springer, 2011. 306 p.

FORTIN, M. J.; DALE, M. Spatial analysis: a guide for ecologists. Cambridge: Cambridge University, 2005. 365 p.

HINKLE, D.E.; WIERSMA, W. JURS, S.G. Applied Statistics for the Behavioral Sciences. 5th ed. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 2003. 756 p.

LEGENDRE, P.; LEGENDRE, L. Numerical ecology. Third English edition. Amsterdam: Elsevier Science, 2012. 1006 p.

Complementary:

BEGON'S text book is highly recommendable reading on sampling design and statistical analysis in ecological studies (e.g. distribution, population growth, behaviour) of plants and animals.

BEGON, M.; TOWNSEND, C.R.; HARPER, J.L. Ecology: From Individuals to Ecosystems, 4th Edition. Wiley-Blackwell, 2005. 750 pages. Version in Portuguese: BEGON, M.; TOWNSEND, C.R.; HARPER, J.L. Ecologia: de indivíduos a ecossistemas. 4 ed. Porto Alegre: Artmed, 2007. 752 p.